

7 RELATIONSHIP TO GOVERNMENTS AND THE WORLD

	<i>Page</i>
7 RELATIONSHIP TO GOVERNMENTS AND THE WORLD	7-1
7.1 Biblical Law: The Foundation of ALL Law	7-3
7.2 Natural Order	7-4
7.3 Rights v. Privileges	7-26
7.3.1 Rights Defined and Explained	7-26
7.3.2 Fundamental Rights: Granted by God and Cannot be Regulated by the Government.....	7-30
7.3.3 What is the Difference Between a “Right” and a “Privilege”?.....	7-32
7.4 Government	7-35
7.4.1 The purpose of government: protection from harm and evil	7-35
7.4.2 How government and God compete to provide “protection”	7-36
7.4.3 The purpose of income taxes: government protection of the assets of the wealthy	7-39
7.4.4 Government as idolatry/religion	7-40
7.4.5 Socialism is Incompatible with Christianity	7-53
7.4.6 Government-instituted slavery using “privileges”	7-59
7.4.7 Civil Disobedience to Corrupt Governments is a Biblical Mandate	7-65
7.4.8 Code of Ethics for Government Service	7-79
7.5 Role of Law	7-80
7.6 Role of Politicians and Rulers	7-83
7.7 Role of Citizens	7-84
7.8 The Nature of Property.....	7-86
7.9 Thomas Jefferson on Property Rights and the Foundations of Our Government.....	7-88
7.10 Testaments of Truth.....	7-89
7.11 The Freedom Test	7-90
7.11.1 Are You Free or Do You Just Think You Are?	7-90
7.11.2 Key to Answers	7-91
7.11.3 Do you Still Think You are Free?.....	7-91
7.12 Sources of Government Tyranny and Oppression.....	7-94
7.12.1 Deception: The Religion of SATAN and our government	7-94
7.12.2 Presumption	7-105
7.12.3 Illegal Acts and Legal Obfuscation	7-112
7.12.4 Propaganda and Political Warfare	7-115
7.12.5 Willful Ignorance of Public Servants.....	7-119
7.12.6 Compelled Income Taxes on Wages (slavery)	7-121
7.12.7 Government identifying numbers: Mark of the Beast	7-122
7.12.7.1 Coercion: The Enumeration At Birth Program.....	7-123
7.12.7.2 Coercion: Denying Benefits for Those who Refuse to Provide Government Identifying Numbers 7-124	
7.12.8 Paper Money.....	7-126
7.12.8.1 What is Money?.....	7-126
7.12.8.2 “Separation of Money and State”	7-131
7.12.8.3 The Founders Rejected Paper Currency	7-136
7.12.8.4 War of Independence Fought Over Paper Money	7-138
7.12.8.5 President Thomas Jefferson: Foe of Paper Money	7-140
7.12.8.6 Wealth confiscation through inflation	7-140
7.12.8.7 The Most Dangerous Man in the Mid South	7-141
7.12.9 The Federal Reserve	7-147

7.12.9.1	The Federal Reserve System Explained	7-148
7.12.9.2	Lewis v. United States Ruling	7-149
7.12.9.3	Federal Reserve Never Audited.....	7-151
7.12.10	Debt	7-151
7.12.11	Surrendering Freedoms in the Name of “Government-Induced Crises”	7-154
7.12.12	Judicial Tyranny	7-155
7.12.12.1	Conflict of Interest and Bias of Federal Judges	7-157
7.12.12.2	Sovereign and Official Immunity	7-159
7.12.12.3	Cases Tried Without Jury	7-161
7.12.12.4	Attorney Licensing	7-162
7.12.12.5	Protective Orders	7-163
7.12.12.6	“Frivolous” Penalties	7-164
7.12.12.7	Fifth Amendment Abuses	7-166
7.12.12.8	Nonpublication of Court Rulings.....	7-168
7.12.12.8.1	Background.....	7-168
7.12.12.8.2	Publication Procedures Have Been Changed Unilaterally.....	7-168
7.12.12.8.3	Publication is Essential to a Legal System Based on Precedent.....	7-169
7.12.12.8.4	Citizens In A Democracy are Entitled to Consistent Treatment from the Courts	7-169
7.12.12.8.5	Operational Realities of Non-Publication	7-169
7.12.12.8.6	Impact Of Non-Publication Inside the Courts.....	7-170
7.12.12.8.7	Openness	7-171
7.12.12.8.8	Constitutional Considerations	7-171
7.12.12.8.9	Opinions Are Necessary, Even in “Insignificant Matters”	7-172
7.12.12.8.10	Impact On The Legal System In Society.....	7-172
7.12.12.8.11	Questions to Ponder.....	7-173
7.13	A Biblical Response to Those Who Say We Should Disarm.....	7-173
7.14	Living in a Pagan/Godless Culture	7-175
7.15	How to Teach Your Child About Politics.....	7-194
7.16	The Bill of No Rights.....	7-195
7.17	Am I A Bad American?-Absolutely NOT!	7-196
7.18	If Noah Were Alive Today.....	7-198
7.19	Prayer at the Opening of the Kansas Senate	7-199
7.20	The Ghost of Valley Forge.....	7-200
7.21	Last Will and Testament of Jesse Cornish.....	7-202
7.22	My Country?.....	7-205
7.23	Grateful Slave	7-206
7.24	Economics 101	7-208

"Government is not reason; it is not eloquence; it is force! Like fire, it is a dangerous servant and a fearful master"
 [George Washington]

Although Christians should always put God first, we still have an obligation to live in the world but not be of this world. That means we have to interact not only with people, including spouses, our children, and our relatives, but also with governments, who are instituted among men through the consent of the governed and who are commissioned by God to serve the best interests of the people.

Much of this chapter is derived from a much larger and more comprehensive work entitled *The Great IRS Hoax: Why We Don't Owe Income Tax* (also written by the author of this book), available for free downloading from:

<http://famguardian.org/Publications/GreatIRSHoax/GreatIRSHoax.htm>

If you find this chapter interesting or motivating, we strongly suggest that you read *The Great IRS Hoax Book*. That book will change forever the way you view the U.S. government and is likely to get you extremely angry at your government for the deception you didn't even realize they were pulling on you before now.

7.1 Biblical Law: The Foundation of ALL Law

The Bible very succinctly defines the basis for all laws as follow:

James 2:8: *"If ye fulfill the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself, ye do well."*

Matthew 7:12: *"Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them: this is the law."*

Matthew 22:36-40: (36) *"Master, which is the greatest commandment in the law?"* (37) *Jesus said to him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul and with all thy mind.* (38) *This is the first and great commandment.* (39) *And the second is like unto it, Though shalt love thy neighbor as thyself.* (40) **On these two commandments hang all law...**

So based on the above, the foundational questions to ask yourself as you read through the tax laws in the following sections of this chapter are:

- Does this law interfere with my ability to worship my God?
- Does this law cause me to commit idolatry by putting government higher than God?
- Does this law cause me to sin against my neighbor based on the biblical definition of sin? Does it force me to do something that is sinful, or prevent me from doing something the bible says I should do?
- Will following this law demonstrate love and compassion for my fellow man? For instance, would the law cause innocent unborn children to be responsible for debts that were incurred during our lifetime, resulting in financial slavery?

If the answer to any of the above questions is **YES**, then you shouldn't follow the law and should do everything you can to defeat, eliminate, and undermine that law. We should:

- Picket it.

- Refuse to subsidize the enforcement of it with our tax dollars.
- Run for political office and eliminate it once elected.
- Write our Congressman to complain about it.
- Vote against it in the ballot box.
- If the law comes in front of a jury that we are sitting on, we should vote against enforcing it.

We can't put it any simpler than that.

7.2 Natural Order

"Don't go around saying the world owes you a living. The world owes you nothing. It was here first."
[Mark Twain]

"Men do not make laws. They do but discover them. Laws must be justified by something more than the will of the majority. They must rest on the eternal foundation of righteousness. That state is most fortunate in its form of government which has the aptest instruments for the discovery of law."
[Calvin Coolidge, to the Massachusetts State Senate, January 7, 1914]

"If the jury feels the law is unjust [violates God's law], we recognize the undisputed power of the jury to acquit, even if its verdict is contrary to the law as given by a judge, and contrary to the evidence ... and the courts must abide by that decision."
[U.S. v. Moylan, 417 F.2d at 1006 (1969)]

"The sole end for which mankind are warranted, individually or collectively, in interfering with the liberty of any of their number is self-protection."
[John Stuart Mill]

"I have lived, Sir, a long time, and the longer I live, the more convincing proofs I see of this truth - that God governs in the affairs of men. And if a sparrow cannot fall to the ground without His notice, is it probable that an empire can rise without His aid."
[Benjamin Franklin]

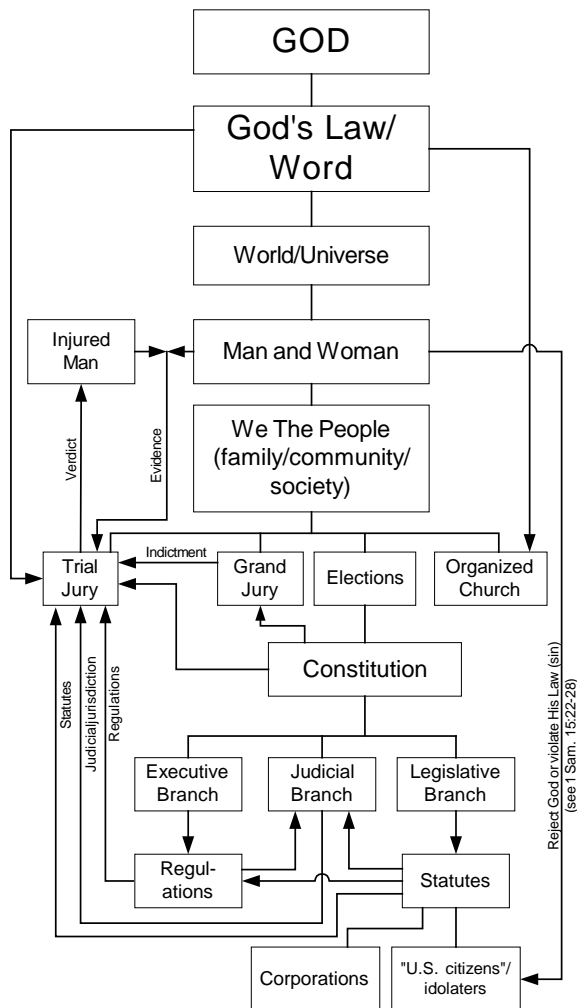
Natural Order is an extension of Natural Law. The foundation of Natural Order is the notion that all creations are subject to and subservient to their Creator, who is always the sovereign relative to the creation. God created man so He is the Sovereign relative to man. Man created the states of the Union, so the people of the state are sovereign relative to their state government. The states of the Union then created the federal government, so the states are the sovereigns relative to the federal government and the federal government is subservient to and subordinate to them. The authority delegated by the states to the federal government is a definition and limitation of the power of the federal (not national) government and under the Tenth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution: "The powers not delegated to the United States by the Constitution, nor prohibited by it to the States, are reserved to the States respectively, or to the people". Here is an example of this concept right from no less than the U.S. Supreme Court:

"A State does not owe its origin to the Government of the United States, in the highest or in any of its branches. It was in existence before it. It derives its authority from the same pure and sacred source as itself: The voluntary and deliberate choice of the people...A State is altogether exempt from the jurisdiction of the Courts of the United States, or from any other exterior authority, unless in the

special instances when the general Government has power derived from the Constitution itself.”
 [Chisholm v. Georgia, 2 Dall. (U.S.) 419 (Dall.) (1794)]

Natural Order therefore defines the natural hierarchy of sovereignty in all of creation based on the order that all things were created. In the words of former President Calvin Coolidge, Natural Law cannot be *created* by man: it can only be *discovered*, and the same is true of Natural Order. Natural law is therefore a product of the following Natural Order and hierarchy of sovereignty. This hierarchy of sovereignty is unchangeable and immutable and cannot be denied, denounced, or legislated away by any court or government because it is a product of who and what we are as human beings. All human beings instinctively understand its meaning and application. Below is a diagram of Natural Order:

Figure 7-1: Natural Order Diagram



Sovereign	References	Explanation	SOVEREIGNTY
God	John 15:20	Omnipotent, omnipresent, source of all Truth "Remember the word that I said to you, A servant is not greater than his master. "	GREATEST ↑
	John 1:1	"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God."	
	Gen. 1:1-25	"In the beginning, God created the heavens and the earth."	
	Gen. 1:26-31 Matt. 4:10	"Let Us make man in Our image" "You shall worship the Lord your God and Him ONLY you shall serve."	
We The People as <u>Individuals</u> (NOT government)	Julliard v. Greenman, 110 U.S. 421 (1884) Hale v. Henkel, 240 U.S. 43 (1906) Perry v. U.S., 394 U.S. 330 (1935)	Sovereignty resides in the people, not in the government. The People created trial by jury, and grand jury to punish/prevent sin. People created elections to organize government. Created church to promote spiritual welfare.	↑ LEAST
	Church: Gen. 3:15	These organizations prevent injustice and protect our life, liberty, and pursuit of happiness.	
	Ten Commandments: Exodus 20:1 thru 20:17	Constitution is a social contract approved through elections.	
	Gen. 11:4-9	Government created by the people.	
	Matt. 20:25-29 Declaration of Independence	"...whoever desires to become great [in the government] among you, let him be your servant. And whoever desires to be first among you, let him be your slave."	
	U.S. v. Mersky, 361 U.S. 431 (1960)	Statutes and regulations (laws) created by government. Executive branch writes implementing regulations based on statutes passed by legislative branch.	
	Bowers v. Kerbaugh-Empire Co., 271 U.S. 170, 174, (1926)	Corporations are fictions created by law. Lies in IRS publications and treason by judiciary try to put you here.	

In the above diagram everyone at a particular level is a "fiduciary" of the parties above and they are bound to this position *by contract*.

fiduciary duty: A duty to act for someone else's benefit, while subordinating one's personal interests to that of the other person. It is the highest standard of duty implied by law (e.g. trustee, guardian).
[Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 625]

A fiduciary relationship is a “master” and “servant” relationship. The fiduciary is the servant and the person receiving the benefit is the master by contract. For instance, we are bound to act as fiduciaries and bondservants who serve the best interests of the sovereign God who created us by the contract or the covenant that God has with us which is documented in the Bible.⁸⁶ Public servants in government, in turn, are contractually bound to us as the sovereigns they serve by written contracts called the U.S. Constitution and our state Constitution. The founding fathers also agreed that the Constitution was a fiduciary contract between the people and their government during the development of that instrument as documented in the Federalist Paper #78:

“No legislative act contrary to the Constitution can be valid. To deny this would be to affirm that the deputy (agent) is greater than his principal; that the servant is above the master; that the representatives of the people are superior to the people; that men, acting by virtue of powers may do not only what their powers do not authorize, but what they forbid...[text omitted] It is not otherwise to be supposed that the Constitution could intend to enable the representatives of the people to substitute their will to that of their constituents. It is far more rational to suppose, that the courts were designed to be an intermediate body between the people and the legislature, in order, among other things, to keep the latter within the limits assigned to their authority. The interpretation of the laws is the proper and peculiar province of the courts. A Constitution is, in fact, and must be regarded by judges, as fundamental law. If there should happen to be an irreconcilable variance between the two, the Constitution is to be preferred to the statute.”
[Alexander Hamilton (Federalist Paper # 78)]

We talked earlier about the terms of the fiduciary duty that exists between the people and their government when we talked about the Code of Ethics for Government service earlier in section 7.4.8. This Code of Ethics embodies and implements the terms of that fiduciary contract between the sovereign people and their servant government. Incidentally, Alexander Hamilton's very words from the Federalist Paper #78 echo those of God Himself, who through His son Jesus said the following:

“Remember the word that I said to you: ‘A servant is not greater than his master.’”
[John15:20]

The Bible covenant between us and our sovereign God also has all the attributes of a valid legal contract:

1. **An offer**: God's Love and forgiveness
2. **Acceptance**: Our acceptance of God's love and forgiveness and sovereignty over our spiritual lives.
3. **Consideration**: We commit our time, our life, our families, and our affections to serving and loving and thanking God for his grace and mercy toward us, who are sinners.
4. **Mutual assent**: God understands us better than we understand ourselves, and we must understand the commitment and the covenant He makes to us by reading the Bible daily.

In many cases, you can confirm the existence of this contract with God by looking in the Bible for the word “yoke”. Here is the definition of “yoke” out of Easton's Bible Dictionary:

⁸⁶ See 1 Peter 2:13-17.

YOKE — (1.) Fitted on the neck of oxen for the purpose of binding to them the traces by which they might draw the plough, etc. (Num. 19:2; Deut. 21:3). It was a curved piece of wood called 'ol.

(2.) In Jer. 27:2; 28:10, 12 the word in the Authorized Version rendered “yoke” is motah, which properly means a “staff,” or as in the Revised Version, “bar.”

These words in the Hebrew are both used figuratively of severe bondage, or affliction, or subjection (Lev. 26:13; 1 Kings 12:4; Isa. 47:6; Lam. 1:14; 3:27). In the New Testament the word “yoke” is also used to denote servitude (Matt. 11:29, 30; Acts 15:10; Gal. 5:1).

(3.) In 1 Sam. 11:7, 1 Kings 19:21, Job 1:3 the word thus translated is tzemed, which signifies a pair, two oxen yoked or coupled together, and hence in 1 Sam. 14:14 it represents as much land as a yoke of oxen could plough in a day, like the Latin jugum. In Isa. 5:10 this word in the plural is translated “acres.”

To be “yoked” means to be contractually or spiritually bound to God: to be figuratively married to Him as His bride. Here is an example from Jesus’ mouth:

*“Come to Me, all you who labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take **My yoke** upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and lowly in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. For **My yoke** is easy and My burden is light.”*
[Matt. 11:28-30, Bible, NKJV]

Incidentally, without this yoke or contract between us and God, without our unfailing allegiance to Him over and above that of any government or state, and without our adherence to this sacred contract as evidenced by our steadfast obedience to God’s laws and His commandments (called “fearing God”), we fall from grace, lose our sovereignty, and are then put into subjection and bondage to man’s laws and to government, who then become our new false god and idol. This is God’s sovereign punishment for our disobedience:

“Behold, to obey [God and His Law] is better than sacrifice, and to heed than the fat of rams. For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is an iniquity and idolatry. Because you have rejected the word of the Lord, He also has rejected you from being king [or sovereign over government].”

*Then Saul [the king] said to Samuel, **“I have sinned, for I have transgressed the commandment of the Lord and your words, because I feared the people [wanted to be politically correct instead of right with God] and obeyed their voice [instead of God’s voice].** Now therefore, please pardon my sin and return with me, that I may worship the Lord.” But Samuel said to Saul [the king], “I will not return with you, for you have rejected the word of the Lord, and the Lord has rejected you from being king over Israel”*

And as Samuel turned around to go away, Saul seized the edge of his robe, and it tore. So Samuel said to him, “The Lord has torn the kingdom of Israel from you today and has given it to a neighbor of yours, who is better than you.”
[1 Sam. 15:22-28, Bible, NKJV]

The diagram at the beginning of this section reflects the above reality with an arrow showing our fall from grace and sovereignty as a “man” to become “U.S. citizens/idolators”, which is the price for disobedience to God’s commandments and laws. When that happens, we become “subjects” of the

federal government and our own ignorance and sin has voluntarily transformed a constitutional republic into a totalitarian “monarchy” or “oligarchy”:

“citizen. 1: an inhabitant of a city or town; esp: one entitled to the rights and privileges of a freeman. 2 a: a member of a state b: a native or naturalized person who owes allegiance to a government and is entitled to protection from it 3: a civilian as distinguished from a specialized servant of the state—citizenly

syn CITIZEN, SUBJECT, NATIONAL mean a person owing allegiance to and entitled to the protection of a sovereign state. CITIZEN is preferred for one owing allegiance to a state in which sovereign power is retained by the people and sharing in the political rights of those people; SUBJECT implies allegiance to a personal sovereign such as a monarch; NATIONAL designates one who may claim the protection of a state and applies esp. to one living or traveling outside that state.”

[Webster’s Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary, ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 243; Emphasis added]

Another important thing to learn from the above scripture is that Saul fell because he was a man-pleaser. He “feared the people” more than he feared God (see Eccl. 12:13-14). This is a polite way to say that he was more concerned with being “politically correct” than in obeying God and His Laws. The Lord was essentially second on Saul’s priority list and so Saul fell from grace and was dethroned as the king and sovereign over his people. The same fate awaits all who do the same today, including us as Americans. God made us the kings and the sovereigns over our servant government, and this sovereignty is a privilege that results from our faith and obedience to God’s Laws and our worship of Him through our righteous actions. Below is a definition of “worship” from Harper’s Bible Dictionary that confirms these conclusions:

***worship**, the attitude and acts of reverence to a deity. The term ‘worship’ in the OT translates the Hebrew word meaning ‘to bow down, prostrate oneself,’ a posture indicating reverence and homage given to a lord, whether human or divine. **The concept of worship is expressed by the term ‘serve.’ In general, the worship given to God was modeled after the service given to human sovereigns [government rulers]; this was especially prominent in pagan religions.** In these the deity’s image inhabited a palace (temple) and had servants (priests) who supplied food (offered sacrifices), washed and anointed and clothed it, scented the air with incenses, lit lamps at night, and guarded the doors to the house. Worshipers brought offerings and tithes to the deity, said prayers and bowed down, as one might bring tribute and present petitions to a king. Indeed the very purpose of human existence, in Mesopotamian thought, was to provide the gods with the necessities of life.*

*Although Israelite worship shared many of these external forms, even to calling sacrifices ‘the food of God’ (e.g., Lev. 21:6), its essence was quite different. As the prophets pointed out, **God could not be worshiped only externally. To truly honor God, it was necessary to obey his laws, the moral and ethical ones as well as ritual laws. To appear before God with sacrifices while flouting his demands for justice was to insult him** (cf. Isa. 1:11-17; Amos 5:21-22). God certainly did not need the sacrifices for food (Ps. 50:12-13); rather sacrifice and other forms of worship were offered to honor God as king. [Achtmeier, P. J., Harper & Row, P., & Society of Biblical Literature. 1985. Harper’s Bible dictionary. Includes index. (1st ed.). Harper & Row: San Francisco]*

The privilege or rulership over our government servants may be revoked at any time if we cease to trust in the Lord and put Him first, no matter the consequence. The reward for our disobedience to

God is a tyrannical and dictatorial government that we become enslaved to and oppressed by because of our sin. We explained why this was the case earlier in section 7.12.1 when we talked about the book of Judges.

Since the Bible is a valid legal contract between us and God just as much as the federal constitution is a contract between the people and their government, then one interesting outcome is that the Constitution forbids states from interfering with such contracts:

United States Constitution, Article I, Section 10

No State shall...pass any Bill of Attainder, ex post facto Law, or Law impairing the Obligation of Contracts, or grant any Title of Nobility.

So not even the government can remove God from His sovereign role over both us and the government, and the Bible confirms that we cannot be separated from the love of God, which is the essence of our faith⁸⁷:

“For I am persuaded that neither death nor life, nor angels nor principalities nor powers [governments or rulers], nor things present nor things to come, nor height nor depth, nor any other created thing, shall be able to separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.”

[Romans 8:38-39, Bible, NKJV, emphasis added]

The Ten commandments say that our top priority is to love God, and by implication, obeying His commandments, His statutes, His Law, and His Word.

“He who has My commandments and keeps them, it is he who loves Me. And he who loves Me will be loved by my Father, and I will love him and manifest Myself to him.”
[John 14:21, Bible, NKJV]

We have taken the time to actually catalog on our website many but not all of God’s laws at the web address below for your reference:

http://famguardian.org/Subjects/LegalGovRef/Education/BibleLawIndex/bl_index.htm

The implications of these revelations are that since God says He and His Law/Word in the Bible are to be first on our priority list, then when or if the vain government of man or its laws attempt to conflict with or supercede the authority of God, we must remind the state that it cannot lawfully interfere with our First Amendment religious views by putting itself above God and in charge of our life or making human laws that conflict with God’s laws which are in the Bible. That very calling and moral obligation of reconciling God’s laws with man’s laws, in fact, is the sole duty of the Trial Jury in the diagram. We even took this argument so far as to PROVE earlier in section 7.4.2 from a legal perspective using evidence exactly how our government has made itself into a religion and a false god to show just how bad this conflict between God and man has become.

God’s laws, however, must always supercede man’s laws because He is the Creator of Heaven and Earth, which makes Him Sovereign over all existence, and we are His sovereign delegates and ambassadors on the earth from whom the government derives ALL of its sovereignty over the finite

⁸⁷ See Matt. 22:36-40

stewardship which we have entrusted to it. Our obedience to God's laws, which sometimes puts us in conflict with man's laws, is what sanctifies us and sets us apart.

*"Come out from among them [the unbelievers]
And be separate, says the Lord.
Do not touch what is unclean,
And I will receive you.
I will be a Father to you,
And you shall be my sons and daughters,
Says the Lord Almighty."
[2 Corinthians [6:17-18](#), Bible, NKJV]*

This faith and sanctification and obedience and joyful service to God makes us into "**ministers of a foreign state**" while we are here on earth from a legal perspective, and the "foreign state" in this case is "heaven" and "God's kingdom". Our ministry is for the glory of God and the love of our fellow man, in satisfaction of the two great commandments of Jesus found in Matt. 22:36-40. No less than the Supreme Court in *U.S. v. Wong Kim Ark*, 169 U.S. 649 (1898) said that the phrase "and subject to the jurisdiction of the United States" found in Section 1 of the Fourteenth Amendment *excludes* "ministers of foreign states" from being "U.S. citizens". That's right: we can't be "U.S. citizens" and thereby make government into our false god because we are only "pilgrims and strangers"⁸⁸ on a foreign mission while we are temporarily here. The only place that Christians can really intend or realistically expect to return permanently to is heaven because nothing here on earth is permanent for us anyway, and life would be *miserable* indeed if it were! I'd like to see someone litigate *that* in a state court. Wouldn't it be fun to watch?

Here, in fact, is what God thinks about human governments and the nations created by man:

*"Behold, the nations are as a drop in the bucket, and are counted as the small dust on the scales."
[Isaiah 40:15, Bible, NKJV]*

*"All nations before Him are as **nothing**, and they are counted by Him **less than nothing and worthless**."
[Isaiah 40:17, Bible, NKJV]*

*"He brings the princes to nothing; He makes the judges of the earth useless."
[Isaiah 40:23, Bible, NKJV]*

*"Indeed **they are all worthless; their works are nothing**; their molded images are wind and confusion."
[Isaiah 42:29, Bible, NKJV]*

Worthless! Now do you understand why the Jews were hated, why Christians are persecuted to this day, and why Jesus was crucified and Paul was executed by the Roman government? The same thing happened to the early Jews, who refused to bow to man's law and held steadfastly to God's law:

*Then Haman said to King Ahasuerus, "There is a certain people scattered and dispersed among the people in all the provinces of your kingdom; **their laws are different from all other people's, and they do not keep the king's laws**. Therefore it is not fitting for the king to let them remain. If it pleases the king, let a decree be written that they be*

⁸⁸ See Phil. 3:20, Hebrews 11:13, 1 Peter 2:1, and James 4:4 for biblical foundation for this fact.

destroyed, and I will pay ten thousand talents of silver into the hands of those who do the work, to bring it into the king's treasuries."
 [Esther 3:8-9, Bible, NKJV]

Christians who are doing what God commands are basically ungovernable unless you put *them* in charge as the sovereigns and give them a *servant* government. Any other approach is idolatry and violates the first commandment (see Matt. 22:36-38). A jealous God (see Exodus 20:5) simply won't allow the government to compete with Him for the affections and the worship of His people, who He calls His "bride" in Rev. 21:9 and Rev. 22:17.

*Do not fear, for you will not be ashamed; neither be disgraced, for you will not be put to shame; for you will forget the shame of your youth, and will not remember the reproach of your widowhood anymore. **For your Maker is your husband, the Lord of hosts is His name; and your Redeemer is the Holy One of Israel; he is called the God of the whole earth,** for the Lord has called you like a woman forsaken and grieved in spirit, like a youthful wife when you were refused," says your God. "For a mere moment I have forsaken you, but with great mercies I will gather you. With a little wrath I hid My face from you for a moment; but with everlasting kindness I will have mercy on you," says the Lord, your Redeemer.*
 [Isaiah 54:4-8, Bible, NKJV]

When we do God's will and obey His commandments and His laws, we become His bride and an important part of His family!:

"For whoever does the will of God is My brother and My sister and mother."
 [Jesus, in Mark 3:35, NKJV]

When we as God's *bride* (yes, we're already married, you *fornicators* and *idolaters* in government looking for an easy lay!) and body of His believers and His children and family commit idolatry by selling ourselves into slavery and subjection to the government in exchange for their protection and privileges and a sense of false security, we are physically and spiritually united with and become "Babylon the Great Harlot" described in Revelation 17:5 of the Bible. The Bible reminds us, as a matter of fact, that it is a *SIN* to demand an earthly king or ruler and that we instead should by implication be self-governing men and women who are guided by the Holy Spirit to do God's will and who are *servants* to His personal and spiritual leadership in our daily lives. He communicates His sovereign will to us daily through our prayers and His word, the Bible. Below is one example where seeking an earthly king instead of God's leadership is described as a sin:

*"Then all the elders of Israel gathered together and came to Samuel at Ramah, and said to him, 'Look, you are old, and your sons do not walk in your ways. **Now make us a king to judge us like all the nations** [and be OVER them]'.*

*"But the thing displeased Samuel when they said, '**Give us a king to judge us.**' So Samuel prayed to the Lord. **And the Lord said to Samuel, 'Heed the voice of the people in all that they say to you; for they have rejected Me, that I should not reign over them. According to all the works which they have done since the day that I brought them up out of Egypt, even to this day—with which they have forsaken Me and served other gods—so they are doing to you also** [government becoming idolatry]."*
 [1 Sam. 8:4-8, Bible, NKJV]

*"And when you saw that Nahash king of the Ammonites came against you, you said to me, '**No, but a king shall reign over us,**' when the Lord your God was your king.*

.....

*And all the people said to Samuel, “Pray for your servants to the Lord your God, that we may not die; for **we have added to all our sins the evil of asking a king for ourselves.**”*
[1 Sam. 12:12, 19, Bible, NKJV]

The king referred to above was Saul and that king was described in 1 Sam. chapters 12 through 15 as selfish and vain, and who did not serve God or follow His commandments, but instead served himself, like most of our current politicians as a matter of fact. The consequence of Saul the king’s selfishness and disobedient and sinful leadership was harm to his people and a violation of his oath and commission of office direct from God at the time he was appointed by Samuel:

*“Now therefore, **here is the king whom you have chosen and whom you have desired. And take note, the Lord has set a king over you.** If you fear the Lord and serve Him and obey His voice, and do not rebel against the commandment of the Lord, then both you and the king who reigns over you will continue following the Lord your God. **However, if you do not obey the voice of the Lord, but rebel against the commandment of the Lord, then the hand of the Lord will be against you, as it was against your fathers.**”*
[1 Sam. 12:13-15, Bible, NKJV]

We must therefore conclude that the vain promise of earthly security that comes from giving a government or a king authority over us is a downright fraud and a farce as we clearly explain in our coverage of the Social Security program earlier in section **Error! Reference source not found.** Our one and only source of security is God, the creator of all things, and substituting anything else in His place is idolatry. The book of Isaiah chapter 46 and 47 describe what happens to those who elevate government above God and it’s not pretty, folks. For a Satanic lie and a false promise of man-made security by an idolatrous government, we have in effect sold or exchanged our precious birthright from God, our sovereignty, and our greatest gift, to Satan and a covetous government for 20 pieces of silver, like Judas did to Jesus and like Esau did to Jacob in the Bible.

*“As it is written, ‘Jacob I have loved, but **Esau I have hated**.’”*
[Romans 9:13, Bible, NKJV]

*“Again, **the kingdom of heaven is like treasure hidden in a field,** which a man found and hid; and for joy over it he goes and sells all that he has and buys that field.”*
[Matt. 13:44, Bible, NKJV]

Our government has conspired with Satan to hide the treasure spoken of above from our view by taking over our education in the public schools and removing all mentions of God from the classroom, from the textbooks, and the pledge of allegiance, and thereby making us ignorant of the value of our birthright and ripe for selling it for pennies on the dollar.

*“Shake yourself from the dust, arise; sit down, O Jerusalem! Loose yourself from the bonds of your neck [government slavery!], O captive [slave to your sin] daughter of Zion! For thus says the Lord: **You have sold yourselves for nothing and you shall be redeemed without money.**”*
[Isaiah 52:2-3, Bible, NKJV]

The Apostle Paul warned us of such abuses when he said:

*“But know this, that **in the last days perilous times will come: For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money,** boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, unloving, unforgiving, slanderers, without self-control, brutal,*

*despisers of good, traitors, headstrong, haughty, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God, **having a form of godliness but denying the power [sovereignty of God]**. And from such people turn away!"*
 [2 Tim. 3:1-5, Bible, NKJV]

The kinds of people described above worship the creation but deny the Sovereignty and existence and the power of the Creator, who is God.

*"Therefore God also gave them up to uncleanness, in the lusts of their hearts, to dishonor their bodies among themselves, **who exchanged the truth of God for the lie, and worshipped and served the creature rather than the Creator**, who is blessed forever. Amen"*
 [Rom. 1:24-25, Bible, NKJV]

By allowing these kinds of idolatrous, godless, and arrogant people to be stewards and leaders over our children in the public schools, we have then become friends of the world and enemies of God.

THE NEW SCHOOL PRAYER

*Your laws ignore our deepest needs
 Your words are empty air
 You've stripped away our heritage
 You've outlawed simple prayer
 Now gunshots fill our classrooms
 And precious children die
 You seek for answers everywhere
 And ask the question "Why"
 You regulate restrictive laws
 Through legislative creed
 And yet you fail to understand
 That God is what we need!*

Our ignorance and disobedience to God then causes us to commit fornication with Satan by joining ourselves to and becoming unequally yoked with an atheistic and in many cases downright evil government.

*"Do you not know that **friendship with the world is enmity with God?** Whoever therefore wants to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God. "*
 [James 4:4]

No doubt, people working in government don't like being called worthless as the scriptures above indicate nor do they enjoy being reminded that they are recruiting prostitutes (harlots) and fornicators from the flock of sheep that are God's, even though it's true, and those Christians who reveal this profound truth are likely to be persecuted by their government like Jesus was:

"And you will be hated by all for My name's sake."
 [Luke 21:17, Bible, NKJV]

Once again to our government servants [of which I am one, by the way]: God Himself says YOUR power and the organization YOU serve is WORTHLESS, with a capital "W"! Did you get that Mr. President and Mr. Congressman and Mr. Supreme Court Justice and Mr. Secretary of the Treasury and Mr. IRS Commissioner, and other arrogant tyrant dictators? God says your job and your authority is "worthless" and "less than nothing". Put your tail between your legs, take a big gulp and swallow that

pride of yours, grovel in the sand, get on your knees and bow, and lick the very Hand, the ONLY Hand that feeds your pitiful mouth because:

*“As I live, says the Lord, every knee shall bow to Me, and every tongue shall confess to God.’ So then, each of us shall give account of himself to God.”
[Romans 14:11, Bible, NKJV]*

*“For what is highly esteemed among men is an abomination in the sight of God.”
[Luke 16:15, Bible, NKJV]*

*“Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and He will lift you up.”
[James 4:10, Bible, NKJV]*

The only reason anyone therefore has to call your profession or your life’s work as a politician or public servant “honorable” is because you are servants of the sovereign people and because you are doing the will of God as their agent and fiduciary in protecting innocent people from harm and exploitation and crime. This very calling, as a matter of fact, is the only authority justifying the existence of civil government because it is a fulfillment of the second greatest command to love our neighbor found in Matt. 22:39. Can a “worthless” organization, as God calls a nation or political party, or the people working in that “worthless” organization write laws that are any more valuable or important than “worthless”? **NOT!** Here is what God says He will do when we elect or allow corrupt politicians governing a “worthless” organization called a “nation” to write vain laws that supersede His law and His Bible:

But to the wicked, God says:

“What right have you to declare My statutes [write man’s vain law], or take My covenant [the Bible] in your mouth, seeing you hate instruction and cast My words behind you? When you saw a thief, you consented with him, and have been a partaker with adulterers. You give your mouth to evil, and your tongue frames deceit. You sit and speak against your brother; you slander your own mother’s son. These things you have done, and I kept silent; you thought that I was altogether like you; but I will reprove you, and set them in order before your eyes. Now consider this, you who forget God, lest I tear you in pieces, and there be none to deliver: Whoever offers praise glorifies Me; and to him who orders his conduct aright I will show the salvation of God.”
[Psalm 50:16-23, Bible, NKJV]

“Shall the throne of iniquity, which devises evil by law, have fellowship with You? They gather together against the life of the righteous, and condemn innocent blood. But the Lord has been my defense, and my God the rock of my refuge. He has brought on them their own iniquity, and shall cut them off in their own wickedness; the Lord our God shall cut them off.”
[Psalm 94:20-23, Bible, NKJV]

It is precisely the above words by God Himself that explain why we have a duty to elect Godly and moral people to public office: so that we don’t have corrupt people in there writing our laws as unjust substitutes for God’s laws and suffer God’s wrath for their misdeeds as our agents and fiduciaries.

“The people of this State do not yield their sovereignty to the agencies which SERVE them. The people, in delegating authority, do not give their public servants right to decide what is good for the people to know and what is not good for them to know. The people insist on remaining informed so that they may

retain control over the instruments they have created.
 [California Government Code, §54950]

Now do you fully understand why the founding fathers gave us the kind of government that they did? It was the ONLY thing that was compatible with their Christian beliefs! If you belong to God and He is your King (Isaiah 33:22), then man and man's vain laws have no dominion over you, according to the Apostle Paul:

"Therefore, if you died with Christ from the basic principles of the world, why, as though living in the world, do you subject yourselves to [government] regulations..."
 [Colossians 2:20, Bible, NKJV]

Likewise, the Apostle Paul removed all doubt that we shouldn't serve anyone but God and His law, when he said:

"But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under the law [man's law]."
 [Gal. 5:18, Bible, NKJV]

"...the law is not made for a righteous person, but for the lawless and insubordinate, for the ungodly and for sinners, for the unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers, for fornicators, for sodomites, for kidnappers, for liars, for perjurers, and if there is any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine, according to the glorious gospel of the blessed God which has committed to my trust."
 [1 Tim. 1:9-11, Bible, NKJV]

*"You were bought at a price; **do not become slaves of men** [and remember that government is made up of men]."*
 [1 Cor. 7:23, Bible, NKJV]

And when Christ's Apostles were told by the government not to preach His word in conflict with what God told them, look what one the Apostles said:

"We ought to obey God rather than men."
 [Acts 5:27-29, Bible, NKJV]

Interestingly, even our pledge of allegiance validates the Natural Order diagram:

*"I pledge allegiance to the flag of the United States of America, and to the Republic, for which it stands, **one nation, under God**, indivisible, with liberty and justice for all."*

If our *whole nation* is under God, then so are its rulers! In this case the rulers are under the people and the people are under God just as the diagram shows. The above diagram is also based on the following four U.S. Supreme Court rulings:

- **Julliard v. Greenman, 110 U.S. 421 (1884)**: "There is no such thing as a power of inherent sovereignty in the government of the United States...In this country sovereignty resides in the people, and Congress can exercise no power which they have not, by their Constitution entrusted to it. All else is withheld."
- **Hale v. Henkel, 240 U.S. 43 (1906)**: "His [the individual's] rights are such as existed by the law of the land long antecedent to the organization of the State, and can only be taken from him by due process of law, and in accordance with the Constitution. Among his rights are a

refusal to incriminate himself, and the immunity of himself and his property from arrest or seizure except under a warrant of the law. He owes nothing to the public so long as he does not trespass upon their rights.”

- **Perry v. U.S., 294 U.S. 330 (1935)**: “In the United States, sovereignty resides in the people...the Congress cannot invoke sovereign power of the People to override their will as thus declared.”
- **Yick Wo v. Hopkins, 118 U.S. 356 (1886)**: “Sovereignty itself is, of course, not subject to law, for it is the author and source of law...While sovereign powers are delegated to...the government, sovereignty itself remains with the people.”

Our founding fathers had equally enlightening things to say that also validated the above diagram:

"The ultimate authority...resides in the people alone..."
[James Madison, Federalist Paper No. 46]

"It is when a people forget God that tyrants forge their chains ..."
[Patrick Henry]

"Those people who are not governed by GOD will be ruled by tyrants."
[William Penn (after which Pennsylvania was named)]

"A free people [claim] their rights as derived from the laws of nature, and not as the gift of their chief magistrate."
[Thomas Jefferson: Rights of British America, 1774. ME 1:209, Papers 1:134]

"Can the liberties of a nation be thought secure when we have removed their only firm basis, a conviction in the minds of the people that these liberties are of the gift of God? That they are not to be violated but with His wrath?"
[Thomas Jefferson: Notes on Virginia Q.XVIII, 1782. ME 2:227]

"Resistance to tyrants is obedience to God."
[Benjamin Franklin]

"Propitious smiles of heaven can never be expected on a nation that disregards the eternal rules of order and right which heaven itself has ordained."
[George Washington (1732-1799)]

God’s law and His word must therefore always supersede government laws or we will suffer God’s wrath. Jesus made this very clear when he said:

*"**No man can serve two masters**: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon."*
[Matt. 6:24, Bible]

In the above scripture, we believe “mammon” refers to wealth or government or commerce. Section 7.4.2 entitled “Government as Idolatry/Religion” extensively reveals based on the Bible why it must be that God has to be first, because if He isn’t then we violate the First Commandment in Exodus 20:1-11 and Matt. 22:36-38 to love our God with all our heart, mind, and soul. Failing to observe this maxim is like declaring the law of gravity null and void, which is an insane proposition indeed! The bible in Jeremiah chapters 16 and 17 describes what happens when a nation and a people deny this fundamental

principle and make government or any other idol into a counterfeit god. Here is an excerpt from that part of the Bible:

“Cursed is the one who trusts in man [for governments made up of men], who depends on flesh for his strength and whose heart turns away from the Lord. He will be like a bush in the wastelands; he will not see prosperity when it comes. He will dwell in the parched places of the desert, in a salt land where no one lives. But blessed is the man who trusts in the Lord, whose confidence is in Him. He will be like a tree planted by the water that sends out its roots by the stream. It does not fear when heat comes; its leaves are always green. It has no worries in a year of drought and never fails to bear fruit.”
[Jeremiah 17:5-8, Bible, NIV]

The Apostle Paul in the Bible also confirmed that God and His laws always supersede man and their vain laws when he said:

“...there is no authority except from God.”
[Romans 13:1, Bible, NKJV]

*“...you are complete in Him [Christ], **who is the head of all principality and power.**”*
[Colossians 2:10, Bible, NKJV]

Why is God the only authority and the source of all authority? The root of the word “authority” is “author”. Because God created us, he is the “author” of our existence, and therefore the only entity in authority over us. He is our only “Lawgiver” and anything else is a cheap, man-made substitute:

*“For the Lord is our Judge, **the Lord is our Lawgiver, the Lord is our King;** He will save us.”*
[Isaiah 33:22, Bible, NKJV]

This is similar to how the government handles patents and copyrights. The creator or author of the writing or invention is the person who has “rights” over the thing he or she created.

“The heavens are Yours, the earth also is Yours; the world and all its fullness, You have founded them;...”
[Psalm 89:11-12, Bible, NKJV]

*“And having been perfected, **He [Jesus] became the author of eternal salvation to all who obey Him.**”*
[Hebrews 5:9, Bible, NKJV]

Likewise, the creator of legal fictions called “corporations” is the government, which is why they can tax and regulate them. Because God is the author of our existence, He endowed us with a natural, instinctive understanding of His law and His sovereignty through the Holy Spirit. Even those who don’t believe in God are endowed with this awareness and sense of morality, in which case it is called “conscience” instead of “Holy Spirit”. This notion of the Holy Spirit is the origin of the whole concept of Natural Law, Natural Order, morality, and Justice. The Bible again confirms this natural gift of the Holy Spirit and the faith that results from it:

*“...let us run with endurance the race that is set before us, looking unto **Jesus, the author and finisher of our faith,** who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the same, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God.”*
[Hebrews 12:2, Bible, NKJV]

Some people point to Romans 13:1 cited above and say that we should be subject to or subservient to our government, even if that government is corrupt. Here is the scripture they will cite again:

“Let every soul be subject to the governing authorities. For there is no authority except from God, and the authorities are appointed by God.”
[Romans 13:1, Bible, NKJV]

What we believe the “governing authorities” as used above by Apostle Paul means is “sovereigns”. Paul was saying that we should be subject to the sovereigns within whatever system of government we are a part. Our system of government is unique in all the world because it is a Republic founded on individual rather than collective rights and all individuals are sovereigns who are individually in charge of the government as a “king” or “governing authority” as the Apostle Paul says here. The people created the government and they existed before the government so they are the sovereigns. Government and public servants within government are there to serve you and me as the individual sovereigns and they must be subject to us and subservient to us, according to Paul’s words above. As we say later in section 7.4.7, the people are the sovereigns rather than the government or anyone working in the government, and the U.S. supreme Court and various state courts agree with this concept as shown below:

“Sovereignty itself is, of course, not subject to law, for it is the author and source of law; but in our system, while sovereign powers are delegated to the agencies of government, sovereignty itself remains with the people, by whom and for whom all government exists and acts.”
[Yick Wo v. Hopkins, [118 U.S. 356](#); 6 S.Ct. 1064 (1886)]

“The people of this State, as the successors of its former sovereign, are entitled to all the rights which formerly belonged to the King by his prerogative. Through the medium of their Legislature they may exercise all the powers which previous to the Revolution could have been exercised either by the King alone, or by him in conjunction with his Parliament; subject only to those restrictions which have been imposed by the Constitution of this State or of the U.S.”
[Lansing v. Smith, 21 D. 89., 4 Wendel 9 (1829) (New York)]

The real “king” in our society is not the government or anyone serving the sovereign people as government employees, but the PEOPLE! That’s you! So even if you misinterpret Jesus’ words to mean that we should render to a corrupt government that which it illegally asks for and demands, since your own government calls you the king, then your public servants are the ones who should be “rendering” to you, who your own government calls the sovereign. Render to the king (Caesar, that’s you) his due, which is everything that is his property and his right, including 100% of his earned wage. What our dishonorable “servant” politicians and lawyers in government have been doing to destroy this natural order is to dumb you down using the public education system and steal your sovereign birthright by legal treachery and trickery hidden in the laws they write, but we as the sovereigns shouldn’t allow them to get away with this fraud and extortion.

The implications of the Natural Order diagram are profound. First of all, the diagram can be very useful as documentation of our religious belief about the authority of government. We can use our First Amendment Right of freedom of religion to put government inside the box where they belong and keep them there. The biggest implication is that we are not to work for or be slaves of our government. Our government is our slave, we are the masters and it has no business dictating anything to us, stealing our money through direct taxes, forcing us to work for them (slavery), or using government

licenses, such as marriage licenses, to impinge on our rights. We are sovereigns relative to it. In the words of Jesus Himself:

“Away with you , Satan! For it is written, ‘You shall worship the Lord your God, and Him **ONLY** [NOT the government!] you shall serve.’”
[Matt. 4:10]

However, if you want to have rights, then you have to act like you have them and know what they are. If you don’t know what they are and don’t insist on them in all your interactions with government **dis**servants, then we can guarantee that the government will pretend like you don’t have any because they want to be in charge.

“Ask not and ye shall **definitely** receive not!”
[Family Guardian Fellowship]

One of our readers (Clyde Hyde, <mailto:candz@mail.ru>) has extended this concept of sovereignty and natural order so far as to litigate in a federal court to request the court to make a declaratory judgment either pronouncing him a slave, or a sovereign, and the courts and the government hate him for it, because he backs them into a corner where they have no choice but to declare the truth about his sovereignty. His efforts were the inspiration behind making the above diagram, and he provided to us a similar but less complete version of the above diagram that inspired this section. Way to go, Clyde! See section 15.14.13, which contains a “Declaratory Judgment to Become a Sovereign” for an example of how he traps the court with this argument into admitting the truth about his sovereignty. It’s fascinating and funny!

The above system of government based on Natural Law and Natural Order is self-regulating and self-balancing. Each entity has a proper role as follows:

Table 7-1: Entities within Natural Order and Their Proper Roles

#	Entity	Role
1	God	Sovereign, omniscient source of absolute truth, mercy, justice.
2	Man/woman	Created in God’s image. Accountable to God for their stewardship over the world. If Christian, have one chance to get it “right”, or will suffer eternal damnation on judgment day (see book of Revelation, the Holy Bible).
3	We the People/family	Voluntary association of persons formed for mutual protection and benefit. Can not and should not impose force on any member of society, except to prevent injustice or harm from occurring. Every member of the society must have equal rights by Nature’s law. Unequal rights are a sign of government tyranny and use of the government for class warfare and oppression by special interest groups.
4	Governing entities:	These entities act as the interface between “We the People” and their servant government. They ensure accountability of the government to the <u>social contract</u> called the <u>Constitution</u> from which the government derives all of its delegated powers.
4.1	Grand Jury	Implement criminal enforcement of the laws of the society within their jurisdiction. Decide who to indict, and on what criminal charges. Interface most often with the Attorney General, the District Attorney, or the Department of Justice within their jurisdiction. Prosecute corrupt public servants for wrongdoing and violation of Constitutional rights. In the case of bad laws, such as those on taxation, refuse to indict persons under such laws, thereby rendering the laws as ineffective as if they were never passed. Also initiate prosecution of citizens who have injured the interests of fellow citizens in violation of criminal laws. The output of the decision-making

#	Entity	Role
		process for Grand Juries is an indictment, that is filed within the jurisdiction covered by their charter. Proceedings are generally very secretive, and the government often tries to unduly influence grand juries by not allowing accused persons to meet with or submit evidence to the grand jury before indictments are filed.
4.2	Elections	Method of expressing the sovereign will of the people to their government servants. Ensure that all persons serving in government are ultimately and continually accountable to the people for their performance or lack thereof. Ensure that laws passed by the legislative branch are consistent with the Constitution and reinforce the sovereignty of the will of We the People.
4.3	Trial jury	Directed by judge of the court as to their roles and responsibilities and proper court procedure. Ordinarily determine only facts necessary to convict, based on the law as interpreted and explained by the judge. However, can also judge and nullify the law if it is a <i>bad</i> law that is inconsistent with the written Constitution or if the judge misinterprets or refuses to discuss the law. Are seldom informed by anyone in government of their right to judge and nullify the effect of the law because government doesn't want them to know they have that kind of power. Receive as input for their decision: <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Jury instructions from the judge. 2. The statute that is being violated. 3. The regulation that implements the statute that is being violated. 4. Evidence submitted by the injured party and third party witnesses.
4.4	Organized church	Agents of social and moral responsibility within organized society. Focus on charity, grace, ministry, and spiritual issues, which are not easily or effectively dealt with by governments. Contribute to proper socialization of children and young adults. Provide stability and order to an otherwise chaotic lifestyle. Hold families together by encouraging commitment. Teach and reinforce love, personal responsibility, and respect for authority. Should encourage change if government becomes tyrannical and provide a pulpit and an audience to organize and effect that change. Cannot function effectively with government intervention, taxation, or regulation. The doctrine of separation of church and state demands that governments not tax or interfere with churches in any way.
5	Constitution	A written social contract between the people and the government who serves them. Purpose is to limit and define the delegated authority possessed by the persons serving in government. Prevents tyranny by distributing powers evenly among independent branches of government so that too much power doesn't concentrate in any one place, where it would likely be abused.
6	Branches of government:	Alexander Hamilton, one of our founding fathers, said the following about the relation of various branches of government to each other: <p><i>"The Executive not only dispenses the honors, but holds the sword of the community. The legislature not only commands the purse, but prescribes the rules by which the duties and rights of every citizen are to be regulated. The judiciary, on the contrary, has no influence over either the sword or the purse; no direction either of the strength or of the wealth of the society; and can take no active resolution whatever. It may truly be said to have neither force nor will, but merely judgment..."</i></p> <p><i>"...This simple view of the matter suggests several important consequences. It proves incontestably, that the judiciary is beyond comparison the weakest of the three departments of power*; that it can never attack with success either of the other two; and that all possible care is</i></p>

#	Entity	Role
		<p><i>requisite to enable it to defend itself against their attacks..."</i></p> <p>We can say that the legislature represents the heart and emotions of the people. And the executive branch represents strength and muscle of the people, and we would suggest that the judiciary represents the rational mind of the people.</p>
6.1	Executive Branch	Role is to execute the day-to-day functions of the government based on the laws passed by the Legislative branch. Carry the "sword" and have the authority to implement and enforce public policy documented in the laws passed by the Legislative branch.
6.2	Legislative Branch	<p>Role is to pass laws, which in most cases take the form of statutes and public law.</p> <p>Responsible for writing laws on taxation and for collecting taxes. These two functions must reside together in order to truthfully say that there is taxation with representation, which was what our country was founded on. Cannot therefore delegate their authority to collect taxes to an executive agency.</p> <p>Control the public "purse" (revenue sources) and spending of these revenues by the Executive Branch.</p>
6.3	Judicial Branch	Responsible for interpreting and applying laws written by the Legislative branch in the event of disputes which cannot be resolved cooperatively among citizens. Only enforce laws and statutes passed by the Legislative branch that are consistent with the written Constitution. This ensures that the Legislative branch does not usurp power or exceed the authority delegated to it by the people. Instruct juries as to the law. Implement courtroom protocol based on Court Rules they write. Develop forms of pleading and practice used to ensure an orderly and repeatable process of justice. Judges often appointed for life and a Constitutional requirement that their salary cannot be reduced by the legislature in order to ensure independence from the Legislative Branch. Can be indicted for wrongdoing by the Grand Jury if they become corrupt or tyrannical.
7	Statutes	Laws written by the Legislative Branch, usually taking the form of written statutes and Public Laws. These laws express the will of the people and must be consistent with the written Constitution and God's Law. The extent to which the laws created by the Legislative branch are inconsistent with Natural Law/God's Law is the extent to which the Trial Jury and the Grand Jury can and often will nullify or refuse to enforce such a law.
8	Regulations	Regulations are written by the Executive Branch of the government in order to implement or enforce the statutes written by the Legislative branch. They are the agency's official interpretation of the statutes. Since the Executive Branch of the government is not a legislative body, the scope of the regulations may NOT exceed the authority or the scope of the statutes they implement. The absence of an implementing regulation also makes the statute unenforceable in most courts.
9	Corporations	Artificial entities created by operation of laws passed by the Legislative branch. Members of this "corpus" or "body" of persons agree to receive government privileges in the form of limited personal liability in the courts in exchange for an agreement to be bound by the laws of the state and pay taxes to that state. The decision to become a corporation is a <i>voluntary act</i> , and therefore taxes paid by corporations can be mandated and still not violated rights in a free country.
10	"U.S. citizen"/idolater	Subjects and serfs of the federal government. Rights and privileges are created and enforced via federal statutes rather than being granted by the Bill of Rights or the Constitution. Are <i>not</i> Sovereigns, but subject citizens of a totalitarian socialist democracy.

In the above system, the government benefits most and makes its power greatest by having misinformed, ignorant, or passive grand jurors and trial jurors who will be good government puppets and not ask too many probing questions. The ideal candidate for this role as far as the government is concerned is someone who graduated from the “public fool system”, I mean public school system, that THEY (the government) were in charge of. Never forget the following:

"Politicians prefer unarmed and illiterate peasants! "

Do you smell a conflict of interest here? This “victim” of the public fool [I mean school] system is legally and socially illiterate and makes a good “sheep” who is easy for the District Attorney (D.A.) to boss around and who will ignorantly enforce unjust and unethical tax laws that will maximize the government’s take from the institutionalized plunder and theft called the income tax. Consequently, it is the goal of this document to provide a “civics lesson” in the hope of atoning for the sins of the public fool, I mean “school” system in encouraging this kind of ignorance about our political process.

Some people, when they read this section, respond to it by saying the following:

“What you are trying to develop and establish is God’s kingdom here on earth. You are trying to impose your religious views on the government and the citizens and expecting them to operate under God’s laws instead of man’s laws. We live in a diverse culture and although a vast majority of Americans do profess a belief in God, you will encounter much resistance to this idea.”

We respond to this comment by saying that we are not insisting that the government do anything other than provide equal and complete protection to everyone for their constitutional rights and their liberties and nothing more. We don’t want to dictate how individuals run their lives or what they can or cannot say. We only wish to ensure that the government fulfills its only legitimate function, which is to prevent injustice rather than to promote justice as we indicated earlier in section 7.5 and to leave people otherwise fully sovereign over their own person and labor and property. These ingredients are the essence of good, wise, and frugal government. Thomas Jefferson agreed with these conclusions:

“With all [our] blessings, what more is necessary to make us a happy and a prosperous people? Still one thing more, fellow citizens--a wise and frugal Government, which shall restrain men from injuring one another, shall leave them otherwise free to regulate their own pursuits of industry and improvement, and shall not take from the mouth of labor the bread it has earned. This is the sum of good government, and this is necessary to close the circle of our felicities.”

[Thomas Jefferson: 1st Inaugural, 1801. ME 3:320]

We believe that separation between church and state is important. We also think the Constitution gives us freedom OF religion, but not freedom FROM religion, and those persons who are nonreligious, and especially gays, liberals, and homosexuals, ought to learn to be much more tolerant of the views of Christians than they are today. It is the height of hypocrisy for them on the one hand to be telling Christians they are intolerant, and on the other hand being totally intolerant of Christians themselves. Such left wing groups have become the Nazi’s of our modern era by trying to pass hate crime laws and government regulations to discriminate against Christians who are exercising their First Amendment right to freedom of religious expression. They have done so in an apparent effort to eliminate what they call discrimination on the part of Christians, even though in most cases the only injury they have suffered came not from the person making the statement or committing an alleged act, but from the conviction of the Holy Spirit acting on their consciousness. We believe that persons of any religion

should be free exercise their rights to follow their religion and to talk freely in public settings about what God's law says about the sins of abortion, homosexuality, and fornication.

What does the Bible say that we should do with government servants who are bad stewards who have abused the authority entrusted to them by their masters? The answer is found in the Parable of the Faithful Steward in Luke 12:41-48. We cite from that passage below:

“But if that servant says in his heart ‘My master is delaying his coming,’ and begins to beat the male and female servants, and to eat and drink and be drunk, the master of that servant will come on a day when he is not looking for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in two and appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. And that servant who knew his master’s will, and did not prepare himself or do according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.”
 [Luke 12:45-47, Bible, NKJV]

Our government is the “servant” of the sovereign people. This “servant” has:

- Kicked the master out of his own house and through eminent domain and taken it, our income, and all our property rights over.
- Is beating not only the male and female servants, but making the master into a servant as well and then beating him too under the color of law but without any lawful authority whatsoever!
- Has abused his authority and stewardship to punish and control the master by claiming falsely to be acting under the authority of law
- Has turned the servants on each other and created a police state by appointing some servants in the financial community to “snitch” on all the other servants so that NO ONE has privacy or sovereignty. The motto is: “*If you’re not going to be a snitch, then you will be my bitch (prostitute).*” as one of our readers puts it. This tactic, incidentally, is the same tactic the communists used in creating informants to snitch on anti-communists.
- Has made it impossible to call himself to account in the courts because the servant has replaced all the judges with his own cronies and threatened those who might convict or persecute him. Every once in a while, they will lynch a sheep like Congressman Traficant or Congressment George Hansen to keep the rest of the sheep in line.

According to the Bible, this wicked servant (our public servants in Congress and the IRS in this case) should be cut in two and flogged and beaten with many stripes. By Natural Law, this would be divine justice for them according to the Bible. Why aren't we doing this to the corrupt tyrants who have taken over our government if Natural Law demands it?

Another interesting fact is revealed by examining the natural order diagram: That governments invented corporations as creatures of law so that they could become a god and an object of slavery and idol worship for that corporation. People in government simply love being treated as gods and they will make laws to encourage such idol worship. Consider the following evidence in support of such a conclusion:

1. The Bible and our Christian God hold us individually and personally responsible (liable) for our acts during this lifetime. See [Rev. 20:11-15](#) and [Romans 14:10-12](#), which says that we will be judged and held accountable by God individually for what we did or didn't do during our lifetime.

For we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ. For it is written:

*“As I live, says the Lord,
 Every knee shall bow to Me,
 And every tongue shall confess to God.”*

*So then each of us shall give account of himself to God.
[Romans 14:10-12, Bible, NKJV]*

2. The fundamental advantage of forming a corporation is limited personal liability. This means at least during our lifetime, that we won't be held personally responsible as an individual for our wrongdoing so long as we did it as an agent of a corporation. The price we pay for this limited liability is to pay taxes on the profits of the corporation to the federal government, on whom we depend entirely for our existence as an artificial legal entity.
3. The problem with corporations is that when people intend to sin or commit crimes, then corporations provide a convenient legal vehicle to escape personal liability for the crimes. One could therefore quite reasonably say that the government (federal mafia) courts become a protection racket for criminals in exchange for the right to collect revenues from them! Is it then any wonder we hear so much of late about corporations cooking the books? Does Enron, MCI Worldcom, Arthur Anderson, Martha Stewart, etc. ring a bell, folks?
4. Because our God is viewed by atheists and sinners as a harsh God who hates sin and whom they would rather avoid accountability to, then a common approach among these people is to try to replace God with government and then get the government to legalize sinful or formerly criminal activity. This approach only works, however, if God can be removed both from the schools, government, and public life, or Christian morality and God's laws will condemn them anyway for their acts.
5. When the government wishes to tax natural persons (biological people), its most common approach is to deceive them using "words of art" and tricky legal definitions into thinking that they are taxable corporations involved in foreign commerce or the officers of such corporations. Even the U.S. Supreme Court agrees that "income" within the meaning of the Constitution means "corporate profit" for the purpose of Subtitle A federal income taxes. See the following cases for verification of this fact:
 - 5.1. *Eisner v. Macomber*, 252 U.S. 189; 40 S.Ct. 189, 9 A.L.R. 1570 (1920).
 - 5.2. *Stratton's Independence v. Howbert*, 231 U.S. 399, 415, 34 S.Sup.Ct. 136, 140 [58 L.Ed. 285]
 - 5.3. *Doyle v. Mitchell Bros. Co.*, 247 U.S. 179, 185, 38 S.Sup.Ct. 467, 469, 62 L.Ed. 1054

Along the lines of corporations, here's a funny satire one of our readers sent us highlighting the fundamental problems with corporations we just pointed out above and showing just how badly man screws things up when he tries to improve on what God gave us:

**REMAINING U.S. CEOs MAKE A BREAK FOR IT! - - - Band of Roving Chief
Executives Spotted Miles from Mexican Border**
July 17, 2002

San Antonio, Texas(Rooters)

Unwilling to wait for their eventual indictments, the 10,000 remaining CEOs of public U.S. companies made a break for it yesterday, heading for the Mexican border, plundering towns and villages along the way, and writing the entire rampage off as a marketing expense.

"They came into my home, made me pay for my own TV, then double-booked the revenues," said Rachel Sanchez of Las Cruces, just north of El Paso. "Right in front of my daughters."

Calling themselves the CEOnistas, the chief executives were first spotted last night along the Rio Grande River near Quemado, where they bought each of the town's 320 residents by borrowing against pension fund gains. By late this morning, the CEOnistas had arbitrarily inflated Quemado's population to 960, and declared a 200 percent profit for the fiscal second quarter.

This morning, the outlaws bought the city of Waco, transferred its underperforming areas to a private partnership, and sent a bill to California for \$4.5 billion.

Law enforcement officials and disgruntled shareholders riding posse were noticeably frustrated.

"First of all, they're very hard to find because they always stand behind their numbers, and the numbers keep shifting," said posse spokesman Dean Levitt. "And every time we yell 'Stop in the name of the shareholders!', they refer us to investor relations. I've been on the phone all damn morning."

"YOU'LL NEVER AUDIT ME ALIVE!"

The pursuers said they have had some success, however, by preying on a common executive weakness. "Last night we caught about 24 of them by disguising one of our female officers as a CNBC anchor," said U.S. Border Patrol spokesperson Janet Lewis. "It was like moths to a flame."

Also, teams of agents have been using high-powered listening devices to scan the plains or telltale sounds of the CEOnistas. "Most of the time we just hear leaves rustling or cattle flicking their tails," said Lewis, "but occasionally we'll pick up someone saying, 'I was totally out of the loop on that.'"

Among former and current CEOs apprehended with this method were Computer Associates' Sanjay Kumar, Adelphia's John Rigas, Enron's Ken Lay, Joseph Nacchio of Qwest, Joseph Berardino of Arthur Andersen, and every Global Crossing CEO since 1997. Since, due to his contacts to Telmex, his knowledge of local geography is claimed to be outstanding, mPhase's Ron Durando was elected to act as the group's pathfinder. ImClone Systems' Sam Waksal and Dennis Kozlowski of Tyco were not allowed to join the CEOnistas as they have already been indicted.

So far, about 50 chief executives have been captured, including Martha Stewart, who was detained south of El Paso where she had cut through a barbed-wire fence at the Zaragosa border crossing off Highway 375.

"She would have gotten away, but she was stopping motorists to ask for marzipan and food coloring so she could make edible snowman place settings, using the cut pieces of wire for the arms," said Border Patrol officer Jennette Cushing. "We put her in cell No. 7, because the morning sun really adds texture to the stucco walls."

While some stragglers are believed to have successfully crossed into Mexico, Cushing said the bulk of the CEOnistas have holed themselves up at the Alamo.

"No, not the fort, the car rental place at the airport," she said. "They're rotating all the tires on the minivans and accounting for each change as a sales event."

The IRS has sent recruiters to accompany law enforcement and disgruntled shareholders in the chase, and has publicly announced that it is offering the CEOs jobs as IRS collection agents and criminal investigators once captured. Charles Rossotti, the IRS commissioner, has offered them anonymity under the FBI's witness protection program. Apparently, the IRS has been having trouble finding employees, since all the honest ones already resigned to seek more honorable employment.

In conclusion, we have a very good video on our website regarding Jury Nullification that was put together by Red Beckman which unifies the lessons in this section. It thoroughly explains the proper role of *each* major entity in our Natural Order diagram in detail and is very enlightening to civic minded citizens. You can watch this video at:

<http://famguardian.org//Subjects/Taxes/taxes.htm>

Go to the “Educational Resources” heading in the white area and click on “Red Beckman’s Fully Informed Jury Training”.

7.3 Rights v. Privileges

This section concerns itself with the origin and nature of rights and and privileges. We discuss the subject both from a biblical as well as a legal/civil perspective. The subject of rights and privileges is of utmost important in understanding our role in society and the relationship that government has to us as the sovereign people that they serve. Failure to fully understand this subject can result in making you into a government slave and signing away all your rights and sovereignty without even realizing it.

7.3.1 Rights Defined and Explained

*"The people...are the only sure reliance for the preservation of our liberty."
[Thomas Jefferson to James Madison, 1787. ME 6:392]*

*"The people of every country are the only safe guardians of their own rights."
[Thomas Jefferson to John Wyche, 1809]*

Black's Law Dictionary (6th edition) defines our Constitutional Rights:

"... Natural rights are those which grow out of the nature of man [the Creator] and depend upon personality, as distinguished from such as are created by law and depend upon civilized society; or those which are plainly assured by natural law:..."

In other words, Natural Rights or Natural Laws come from nature [the Creator] and are separate and distinct from those laws derived by man. Our Constitution not only recognizes these Natural Rights (Natural Laws), but guarantees them as individual Rights. The Constitution recognizes that they are superior to all other laws, including the laws made by man (any level of government). That is, unless of course you freely waive your Rights, which is exactly what you do under compulsion every time you file an income tax return. It is likely, however, that you didn't know that is what you were doing. Hence, this section.

Possession of a legal right conveys certain advantages upon us in a court of law as revealed by the U.S. supreme Court, ***Marbury v. Madison, 5 U.S. 137, 1 Cranch 137; 2 L.Ed. 60 (1803)***:

The very essence of civil liberty certainly consists in the right of every individual [note that he said individual, and not citizen, since you don't have to be a citizen to have the protection of government] to claim the protection of the laws, whenever he receives an injury. One of the first duties of government is to afford that protection. In Great Britain the king himself is sued in the respectful form of a petition, and he never fails to comply with the judgment of his court.

In the 3d vol. of his Commentaries, p. 23, Blackstone states two cases in which a remedy is afforded by mere operation of law.

"In all other cases," he says, "it is a general and indisputable rule, that where there is a legal right, there is also a legal remedy by suit, or action at law, whenever that right is invaded."

And afterwards, p. 109, of the same vol. he says,

“I am next to consider such injuries as are cognizable by the court of the common law. And herein I shall for the present only remark, that all possible injuries whatsoever, that did not fall within the exclusive cognizance of either the ecclesiastical, military, or maritime tribunals, are, for that very reason, within the cognizance of the common law courts of justice; for it is a settled and invariable principle in the laws of England, that every right, when withheld, must have a remedy, and every injury its proper redress.

The government of the United States has been emphatically termed a government of laws, and not of men. It will certainly cease to deserve this high appellation, if the laws furnish no remedy for the violation of a vested legal right.”

The above case is often cited as an authority on the subject of rights, even by the government, and makes mandatory reading for the budding freedom fighter.

The supreme Court has said repeatedly that governments may not tax or regulate the exercise of rights. Here is but one example:

“A state may not impose a charge for the enjoyment of a right granted by the Federal Constitution.”

[Murdock v. Commonwealth of Pennsylvania, 319 U.S. 105; 63 S.Ct. 870 (1943)]

However, governments can regulate the exercise of “privileges”:

“The power to tax the exercise of a privilege is the power to control or suppress its enjoyment.”

[Murdock v. Commonwealth of Pennsylvania, 319 U.S. 105; 63 S.Ct. 870 (1943)]

The key to having rights is to *avoid* the government trap of becoming a person in receipt of government privileges. Even the U.S. Supreme court admitted this, when it said:

*“**The rights of sovereignty extend to all persons and things not privileged**, that are within the territory. They extend to all strangers resident therein; not only to those who are naturalized, and to those who are domiciled therein, having taken up their abode with the intention of permanent residence, but also to those whose residence is transitory. All strangers are under the protection of the sovereign while they are within his territory and owe a temporary allegiance in return for that protection.”*

[Carlisle v. United States, 83 U.S. 147, 154 (1973)]

Keep in mind that being a “U.S. citizen”, in receipt of the “privileges and immunities” of citizenship mentioned in Section 1 of the Fourteenth Amendment is the very privilege that in effect, denies you your other Constitutionally guaranteed rights and personal sovereignty.

*“Section. 1. All persons born or naturalized in the United States and subject to the jurisdiction thereof, are citizens of the United States and of the State wherein they reside. No State shall make or enforce any law which shall abridge the **privileges or immunities of citizens of the United States**; nor shall any State deprive any person of life, liberty, or property, without due process of law; nor deny to any person within its jurisdiction the equal protection of the laws.”*

[Fourteenth Amendment]

The key to having rights is to not be a privileged “U.S. citizen” or a “citizen of the United States” under the 14th Amendment to the U.S. Constitution, but instead to be a “U.S. national” defined in 8

U.S.C. §1408. You don't need the Fourteenth Amendment or "U.S. citizenship" to have rights. As we said at the beginning of this chapter and will say again in section 7.3, *your rights come from the land you live on and not your citizenship status*. The only thing that citizenship status does is *take away* rights, not *endow* you with rights. The Fourteenth Amendment was invented to protect blacks from slavery and discrimination, and no other reason. Everyone else who wasn't black and wasn't Fourteenth Amendment citizens *already had* the rights of kings!

*"No white person born within the limits of the United States, and subject to their [the states, and not the federal government] jurisdiction, or born without those limits, and subsequently naturalized under their laws, owes the status of citizenship to the recent amendments [Thirteenth and Fourteenth Amendments] to the Federal Constitution."
[Van Valkenburg v. Brown, 43 Cal. 43 (1872)]*

The various articles contained within this chapter will demonstrate to you the facts and the proof, not only that these things are true, but just how they are used to infringe upon your Unalienable Rights as Sovereign Citizens and "natural persons" of the several Union States. These Sovereign Citizens of the several States are the only People who have Constitutional (Natural) Rights. No other status of "citizenship" or "residency" has these Natural Rights, yet you claim these other forms of citizenship everyday, and as you do so, you are unknowingly waving your Natural Rights for the illusion of benefits and privileges from the federal government. In effect, you have exchanged your own Natural Rights for mere "government privileges" and thereby irreparably compromised your personal liberty and sovereignty [Whoops.]

It is all a matter of perspective and choice. The problem is, you probably don't know or understand that there are two sides to this coin - and more importantly, that you have a choice. If you don't know how or when to "Reserve your Rights" then you become prey to oppression and tyranny by any one, including the various levels of government, who might wish to take advantage of you for their own sake or their notions of what is best for you. It is time to take charge of your own destiny and stop being so casual about your Rights. You do have them, in that they do still exist. The question is do you have access to them, when you need them the most. Not likely, unless you understand and use this valuable information at every turn in your involvement with all levels of government.

So, please, take the time to read, study and verify this information thoroughly for yourself. And please, feel free to share it with others. Organize discussion groups with your friends, relatives, and with your various clubs and organizations. The more people who become enlightened, the sooner we can stop the insanity of oppression and tyranny, by any one, especially our own government.

Time after time we have all heard the expression, "*The People have the power.*" Probably more times than any one of us can count. We have heard that "We the People..." are the masters and the federal government is the servant of the People. Today, most of us would agree that it is the other way around. Yet few of us can explain how or why this has come to be true. While most of us understand these powers are actually our Rights as they were known, understood and written into the Declarations of Independence, the Constitution of the United States of America and the Bill of Rights, few of us understand how to use and enforce these Rights. The majority of us are unaware of how to protect these rights and ourselves from those who would choose to usurp them, entrapping us into a web of deceit and misleading us to believe we must obey what are obviously laws which function outside our protections under the Constitution.

We often hear speakers proclaim “*The people must protect (reserve) their Rights or they won't have any.*” Yet, few actually know how. Of course every elected official is required to take an oath of office, which includes the statement “... to protect and defend the Constitution of the United States of America...”. As we all have come to realize, we are gradually losing our Rights with each passing year, as the government continues to erode them away with still more federal regulation being imposed.

In paraphrasing Supreme Court Justice Clarence Thomas (well known for his conservative views), he said:

“... I promise to fight federalism at ever turn. But, the People must first 'reserve' their 'Rights' or I can do nothing ...”

We have all heard other notable people make similar statements in the past, and yet I have found that very few of us actually know and understand what is meant by these words. Most of us assume that the government itself is waging the battle to protect our Rights, or simply believe that these Rights we have are just there and known to all. So, who in their right mind would, or even could, get away with denying them? As you read this section, not only will you come to know exactly what Justice Thomas meant in those few words, but you will also understand precisely how to go about “reserving your Rights.” You will learn that there is a lot more going on here than first meets the eye.

So, how do we protect and enforce these Unalienable Rights granted to us by our Creator, from those who would steal them away? Who are those that would trick us into being unknowing and unwilling victims of what seems to be unconstitutional laws that violate our natural rights?

Most would agree that it is the government and big business which seek to usurp our rights. The government on all levels (local, county, state and federal) operates on a system that is actually outside the protections of the Constitution, which is a little known and even less understood conspiracy perpetrated on the American People to control their lives and their money (property and other assets). Meanwhile, big business lobbies congress to the point that “We the People...” have little if any input or affect in the legislative process. So, it is our elected officials in government who have betrayed both their oaths of office, and our faith that they will do what they promised during the election process.

It is our goal, as set forth in this book, to inform you as to precisely how government and big business accomplish these deeds of deception, trickery and fraud. Then, to further instruct you, we will educate you as to how to overcome these obstacles and barriers to the freedoms we were granted by our Creator, and guaranteed by our Constitution, for which so many have fought and died to preserve and protect for ourselves and for our posterity.

We have the power - we always have! It is time then to reeducate ourselves, getting away from the leftist rhetoric and back to the simple facts of the matter in an effort to save our Constitution and our Individual Freedoms. Our tolerance and silence has too long been mistaken for ignorance, and the faith we have entrusted in our elected officials has certainly been betrayed.

“No legislative act contrary to the Constitution can be valid. To deny this would be to affirm that the deputy (agent) is greater than his principal; that the servant is above the master; that the representatives of the people are superior to the people; that men, acting by virtue of powers may do not only what their powers do not authorize, but what they forbid. It is not to be supposed that the Constitution could intend to enable the representatives of the people to substitute their will to that of their constituents. A Constitution is, in fact, and must be regarded by judges, as fundamental law. If there

should happen to be an irreconcilable variance between the two, the Constitution is to be preferred to the statute.” - Alexander Hamilton (Federalist Paper # 78)

“Where rights secured by the Federal Constitution are involved, there can be no rule-making or legislation which would abrogate them.”

Miranda v. Arizona, 384 US 436 (1966)

“Truth is incontrovertible, ignorance can deride it, panic may resent it, malice may destroy it, but there it is.” Winston Churchill

7.3.2 Fundamental Rights: Granted by God and Cannot be Regulated by the Government

It is disturbing to read that the IRS can come to someone's door to demand to see personal documents, which in some cases are private even to members of our own family. It is also embarrassing to see that so many of us are not willing to do more than "bitch a little" when we hear or read about these encroachments.

Obviously, in the case of filing government forms, once we volunteer, we usually use whatever means at our disposal to cut down the amount of theft and plunder by the government, even at the further expense of our rights and liberty. Since deductions are a matter of legislative grace, the burden of proof shifts to "we the people" to verify the claims taken on the forms, which were signed under penalty of perjury.

Simply stated, once we allowed ourselves to get involved in this taxing scheme, it puts us in the position of having to strip before a government agent, who at his discretion will tell us how close to naked we have to get. To be quite frank, there is nothing stopping him from saying, "OK. now bend over."

Once compromised, we're on that "slippery slope," having exchanged our status as master over government for that of being subject to and subservient to government. In effect, we are transformed into government slaves and prostitutes when natural persons volunteer to become "privileged taxpayers".

Each of us needs to just stop and take a little time to analyze just how far down the path of subject status we have come. Just how much farther are we willing to go before we say, "Enough" or are we willing to even say "Enough"?

We should be asking ourselves: Just how sacred are our God given constitutionally protected rights? Have we lost sight of our objective of restoring liberty for ourselves and family? And even if we know something is wrong, and we start to do something about it, are we standing on solid ground?

There are a lot of theories on why we shouldn't be obligated to file tax forms. To me the number one position, in a class of its own, is the required waiver of fundamental rights. The whole income tax battle is a rights issue.

We are the masters over our government and not its subjects. We are the sovereigns! We should not allow ourselves to be compelled to waive fundamental rights to comply with some taxing scheme, merely for exercising my right to work and exist.

We absolutely have no "legal duty" to waive our fundamental rights to speak or not to speak, as protected under the First amendment, my right to be secure in my personal home, papers and effects, as protected under the Fourth amendment, my right not to be compelled to be a witness against myself and my right to due process of law, as protected under the Fifth and Fourteenth Amendments, my right to an impartial judge and jury, as protected under the Sixth amendment or any other rights protected under the Ninth amendment.

This is not a wild theory claim. We don't need to claim rights under the state Uniform Commercial Code. Our rights are God given, not commercially given. Neither do I need to fear waiving a right because I use a "zip code" as part of my mailing address.

The Supreme Court of the United States has already ruled on the standard for waiver of rights.

"Waivers of constitutional rights not only must be voluntary but must be knowing, intelligent acts done with sufficient awareness of the relevant circumstances and likely consequences."

[Brady v. U.S., 397 U.S. at 749, 90 S.Ct. 1463 at 1469 (1970)]

See also the following cases:

Fuentes v. Shevin, 407 U.S. 67 (1972);

Brookhart v. Janis, 384 U.S. 6 (1966);

Empsak V. U.S., 349 U.S. 190 (1955);

Johnson v. Zerbst, 304 U.S. 58 (1938).

The issue of protection of rights has a track record 10 miles long. We should be able to confidently say:

"We got em, they are ours, you (government) can't take em. If you (government) say that we lost them or waived them, the burden of proof is on you (government) to show us how we lost them or waived them or where you have the authority to take them."

Let us cite an example that establishes a standard for the protection of rights, so you can see some of these cases that establish that track record. Back in the 60's, there was a voting rights case down in Texas. The state of Texas was imposing a poll tax on the voters prior to letting them vote. The Texas U.S. District Court said in *U.S. v. Texas*, 252 F.Supp 234, 254, (1966):

"Since, in general, only those who wish to vote pay the poll tax, the tax as administered by the State, is equivalent to a charge or a penalty imposed on the exercise of a fundamental right. If the tax were increased to a high degree, as it could be if valid, it would result in the destruction of the right to vote. See Grosjean v. American Press Co., 297 U.S. 233, 244, 54 S.Ct. 444 (1936).

[Note that the court reiterated the fundamental premise of law expressed by Chief Justice John Marshall in the landmark decision of *McCulloch v. Maryland*, 4 Wheat 418 at 431 (1819), that "the power to tax is the power to destroy."]

The Texas district court went on to quote from the Supreme Court case of *Harman v. Forssenius*, 380 U.S 528 at 540, 85 S.Ct. 1177, 1185 (1965):

"It has long been established that a State may not impose a penalty upon those who exercise a right guaranteed by the Constitution." [Frost & Frost Trucking Co. v. Railroad Comm'n of California, 271 U.S. 583. "Constitutional rights would be of little

value if they could be indirectly denied,' Smith v. Allwright, 321 U.S. 649, 644, or manipulated out of existence,' Gomillion v. Lightfoot, 364 U.S. 339, 345."

That Texas federal district court held the poll tax unconstitutional and invalid and enjoined the state of Texas from requiring the payment of a poll tax as a prerequisite to voting.

Now a rare legal procedure followed that ruling. The state of Texas appealed. Not to the court of appeals, but directly to the Supreme Court. And in an equally rare circumstance, the Supreme Court took the district court's opinion as its own and affirmed the Judgment based on the facts and opinion stated by the district court. See Texas v. U.S., 384 U.S. 155 (1966)

When the Amendments to the Constitution for the United States were ratified, they were considered a bill of restrictions on the government, not a grant of rights that could be taken from "we the people." The courts have upheld this premise many times, so if you're going to take a stand, it would be wise to base that stand on a position that has, at the minimum, the track record established for the guarantee of fundamental rights. There is none better!!

The conclusion of this exercise then, is that the government cannot tax or penalize the exercise of a right. You might then ask yourself:

1. Why does the IRS impose a \$500 fine for filing a tax return that exercises our Fifth Amendment right not to incriminate ourself and doesn't have our signature? (this is called a Jurat violation)
2. Why does the IRS impose a \$50 fine upon employers or individual who file a 1099 form that does not have a social security number if the party we employed wants his or her 5th Amendment right not to incriminate him/herself respected?
3. Why can the state require individuals to provide their social security number in order to get a driver's license that allows them to exercise their RIGHT to drive?
4. Why can the government impose penalties on individuals for the exercise of rights when the Constitution in Article 1, Section 9, Clause 3 specifically forbids the federal government to impose Bills of Attainder, which are penalties not imposed by a jury trial? Likewise, Article 1, Section 10 also forbids states to impose penalties without a judicial trial?

The answer is that neither the state nor federal governments are legally allowed to do any of the above, because they amount to a tax or a penalty on the exercise of a God-given right! If you look for the implementing regulations that authorize any of the above actions, they don't exist, so such actions by the government are ILLEGAL and constitute a tort that you can sue for in court. These are the very illegal actions that convert our glorious republic into a relativistic, socialistic democracy where the collective as a whole is the sovereign and no individuals have rights.

7.3.3 What is the Difference Between a "Right" and a "Privilege"?

A right is a behavior or a choice, the exercise of which can't be taken away, fined, taxed, or regulated by anyone, including the government. A privilege, is something that can be taken away at any moment, usually at the discretion of the entity providing it, subject only to the contractual and legal constraints governing your relationship with that entity. For instance, it is unconstitutional for the government to tax or fine you for exercising your right to free speech guaranteed by the First Amendment to the Constitution. To give another example, no one, including the government, your

employer, or another human being can fine or penalize you for exercising your right to vote, for instance, by taxing you or charging you a fee. If voting were a privilege then they could, but it is a right, so they can't. Such a fee is called a "poll tax" and the courts have repeatedly held that poll taxes are illegal, no matter who charges them.

You can't be fined you for exercising the right not to incriminate yourself guaranteed by the 5th Amendment, by, for instance, fining you \$500 (under the "Jurat" amendment and 26 U.S.C. §6702) for refusing to sign your 1040 income tax return "under penalty of perjury". The government also should never be permitted to fine you for your right under the Petition clause of the constitution to correct a government wrongdoing (the First Amendment states that we have a right "to petition the Government for a redress of grievances."), but in fact the courts routinely do this anyway, in violation of the Constitution. This tactic is part of the "judicial conspiracy to protect the income tax" defined elsewhere in this document, including in section 6.6. The fact that most Americans allow and tolerate this kind of injustice, abuse, and violation of their God-given rights confounds us and simply reveals how apathetic and indifferent we have become about our heritage and our treasured rights under the Constitution of the United States.

Privileges, however, are much different from rights. Privileges we want are how the government, our employer, and others we know enslave and coerce us into giving up our rights voluntarily. Giving up a right is an injury, and as one shrewd friend frequently said:

"The more you want, the more the world can hurt you."

The more needy and desperate we allow ourselves to become, the more susceptible we become to being abused by voluntarily jeopardizing our rights and becoming willing slaves to others. There is nothing unconstitutional or illegal about giving away our rights in exchange for benefits in this way, so long as we do it voluntarily. Situations where we surrender rights in exchange for privileges are commonplace and actually are the foundation of the commercial marketplace. This exchange is referred to as a business transaction and is usually governed by some contractual or legal vehicle in order to protect the property interests of the parties to the transaction. This legal vehicle is the Uniform Commercial Code, or UCC. An example of a privilege we give up our property rights to exercise is legalized gambling. If a person is a compulsive gambler and they lose their whole life savings and gamble themselves into massive debt, they in effect have sold themselves into legalized financial slavery to the casino. That's perfectly legal, and the laws will protect the property interest of the casino and the right of the casino to collect on the debt. Even though the Thirteenth Amendment outlawed slavery and even though the gambler might be a slave in this circumstance, because it was his choice and he wasn't compelled to do it, then it isn't illegal or unconstitutional.

Another example of privileges being exchanged for rights is when we obtain a state marriage license. When we voluntarily get a marriage license, we basically surrender our God-given right to control the fruit of our marriage, including our children and all our property, and give jurisdiction to the government to control every aspect of our lives. Many people do this because their hormones get the better of them and they aren't practical or rational enough to negotiate the terms of their marriage and won't sit down with their spouse and write down an agreement that will keep the government out of their lives. Marriage is supposed to be a confidential spiritual and religious union between a man and a woman, but when we get a marriage license, we violate the separation of church and state and actually get married not only to our spouse, but also to the government. We become, in effect, a polygamist! A marriage license is a license to the government, not to us, that allows them to invade our lives any way they see fit at anytime at the request of either spouse and based on the presumption that they are

furthering the “public good”, whatever that is! If couples get married in the church and get a marriage certificate but don’t get a marriage license from the state, then the government has no jurisdiction over the spouses, the children, or the property of the marriage. If divorce results, the parties can litigate if need be, but the government has to stay within the bounds of any written or verbal agreement that the spouses have between them.

The government can’t take away rights against your will but it can *definitely* take away privileges, often indiscriminately. For instance, receiving social security checks is a privilege, and not a right. The courts have repeatedly ruled that social security is not a contract or a right, but a privilege. See section **Error! Reference source not found.** entitled “Social Security Is NOT a contract” for further details on this subject. We can only earn that privilege by “volunteering” to be a U.S. or “federal” citizen and paying into the Social Security System. Paying into the Social Security System means we have to waive our right to *not* be taxed on our income with direct taxes, which the Constitution forbids. Same thing for Medicare and disability insurance. There is nothing immoral or unethical or illegal with being taxed on our income to support these programs *provided*:

1. We are informed prior to joining that participation was *voluntary* and that we could not be coerced to join.
2. There is some measure of accountability and fiduciary duty associated with the government in managing and investing our money. Good stewardship of our contributions by the government is expected and bad stewardship is punished by the law and those who enforce the law.
3. We are informed frequently by the fiduciary that we can leave the program at any time, and that our benefits will be proportional to our contributions.
4. We made a conscious, informed decision on a signed contract to sacrifice our rights to qualify to receive the benefit or privilege.
5. If you die young or never collect benefits, your contributions plus interest should be given to your relatives.
6. There is no unwritten or invisible contract that binds us, and nothing will be expected of us that wasn’t clearly explained up front before we signed the contract.

However, the problem is that our national government has mismanaged the funds put into the Social Security System and squandered the money. This has lead them to violate their fiduciary duties and the above requirements as follows:

1. The government refuses to be accountable or to notify us of the benefits we have earned. They also don’t tell us on their statements how much we would earn if we quit contributing today and only drew benefits based on what we paid in the past.
2. The federal government won’t tell us that participation is voluntary and they provide no means on the social security website (<http://www.ssa.gov>) to *de-enroll* from the program. Instead, they try to fool us all into thinking that the program is mandatory when in fact it is entirely voluntary. The reason the U.S. Government won’t tell us that participation is voluntarily is that so many people would leave such an inefficient and poorly managed system to start their own plans when they find this out that the Pozzi scheme it has become would suffer instant meltdown and would turn into a big scandal!
3. If you never collect benefits or you die young, all the money you paid in and the interest aren’t given to your relatives as an inheritance. The government keeps EVERYTHING, and this is a BIG injustice that would not occur if the program were run more like the annuity that it should be.

4. There is no written agreement or contract, so they have no obligation or liability to be good stewards over our contributions.
5. Our kids are coerced into joining the system when they are born under the Enumeration At Birth program and the decision is made by their parents and not by them directly. This is unethical and immoral. See section 7.12.7.1 for details on this type of scamming by the government.
6. We are also coerced by our parents to join because the IRS deceives us into thinking that we are obligated to get Socialist Security Numbers for each of our children in order to qualify to use them as deductions on our taxes. In effect, they bribe us with our own money to sell our children into slavery into this inept and poorly managed system.

For all the above reasons and many more, *we recommend expatriating out of this bankrupt system as quickly as you can!* It's a "privilege" you can't be coerced to participate in anyway. We have to ask ourselves: Is a *compelled* benefit really a benefit, or just another form of slavery? The trick is determining how to escape, because you will get absolutely NO help from the Social Security Administration or the government! We provide answers to this dilemma of how to abandon the Social Security Program and your federal citizenship in Chapter 8 later on in this book.

7.4 Government

7.4.1 The purpose of government: protection from harm and evil⁸⁹

According to the Bible, the purpose of government is to reward good and punish evil. Our response to godly government is found in the same passage as God's purpose for government.

"Submit yourself to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake, whether it be to the king, as supreme, or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well." [1 Peter 2:13-14, Bible, KJV]

Our duty to submit to godly authority has a qualifier attached to it, and that is that the authority be godly, that it "praises good and punishes evil." When authority ceases to be godly, then we cease to have a duty to submit to it. Those people who founded America found themselves in that position where they could not please both God and the British government and their reaction was to rebel.

If God is who He says He is, then He is the ultimate designer of all that exists in the universe. The scriptures identify four types of government: personal government, family government, church government and civil government. If God is God then only He has the authority to set the jurisdictional boundaries between each type of government. For example, God delegated to families the teaching of children, not to government. The entire system of government schools is a violation of God's design. A civil government limited in jurisdiction to only the purposes identified in scripture would need very little money to operate. There would be no need to tax a man's right to exist. No need to tax his wages or salary.

As of 1909, when the Sixteenth Amendment was proposed, the federal government had yet to become the great nanny in the sky (the political corporation, or *Parens Patriae*) solving everybody's problems

⁸⁹ Adapted from *Constitutional Income: Do You Have Any?*, Phil Hart, 2001, Morris Publishing, pp. 88-94.

from cradle to grave. Instead, our government largely followed the Biblical mandate just mentioned. Government's fundamental duty to protect life and property can also be found at Romans 13:3-4.

The Geneva Bible, which is the Bible the Pilgrims used, states:

“For princes are not to be feared for good works, but for evil. Wilt you then be without fear of the power? Do well. For shalt though have praise of the same. For he is the minister of God for thy wealth. But if though do evil, fear: for he beareth not the sword for nought: for he is the minister of God to take vengeance on him that doth evil.”
[Geneva Bible, 1st Edition, 1560]

When government takes one-third or more of a man's yearly earnings, using as its authority to do so a law that is many thousands of pages long and so complicated that virtually no one can understand it, is government doing good? Or is government doing evil?

The way to make people respect the law is to make the law respectable. The way to make the law respectable, in turn, is to keep it short and simple and comprehensible by the common man, who is the person it was intended to apply to. The extent to which only judges and lawyers can understand the law is the extent to which the law is no longer respectable.

Adam Smith, in his famous book entitled “Wealth of Nations,” upon which our founders heavily relied when they wrote our Constitution, espoused this same general concept of government described above:

“The first duty of the sovereign is, that of protecting the society from the violence and invasion of other independent societies...The second duty of the sovereign is, that of protecting, as far as possible, every member of the society from the injustice or oppression of every other member of it... The third duty and last duty of the sovereign or commonwealth is that of erecting and maintaining those public institutions and those public works, which, though they may be in the highest degree advantageous to a great society...”
[Adam Smith, *Wealth of Nations*, book V, pp. 468-473, (1776); Prometheus Books, Amherst, New York, 1991]

When Jesus said, “Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's: and to God the things that are God's,” (Matt. 22:21) notice that He did not say, “Give Caesar everything he asks you for.” Inherent in the former statement is the idea that there are limits on what belongs to Caesar. In God's world view, civil government has limited jurisdiction. If government asks you to render to it the mind of your child, will you obey or object?

7.4.2 How government and God compete to provide “protection”

We stated in the previous section that the goal of government is protection of the liberties of the sovereign public from evil and harm. Here is an example from the Declaration of Independence:

“We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty and the pursuit of Happiness.--That to secure these rights, Governments are instituted among Men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed, -- That whenever any Form of Government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the Right of the People to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new Government, laying its foundation on such principles and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to effect their Safety and Happiness.”

Because God loves us, He has *exactly* the same purpose and goal as any just government should have. Here are a few examples of how the purpose of God is protection:

“O you afflicted one, tossed with tempest, and not comforted, behold, I will lay your stones with colorful gems, and lay your foundations with sapphires. I will make your pinnacles of rubies, your gates of crystal, and all your walls of precious stones. All your children shall be taught by the Lord, and great shall be the peace of your children. In righteousness you shall be established; you shall be far from oppression, for you shall not fear; and from terror, for it shall not come near you. Indeed they shall surely assemble, but not because of Me. Whoever assembles against you shall fall for your sake.

“Behold, I have created the blacksmith who blows the coals in the fire, who brings forth an instrument for his work; and I have created the spoiler to destroy. No weapon formed against you shall prosper, and every tongue which rises against you in judgment you shall condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the Lord, and their righteousness is from Me,’ says the Lord.” [Isaiah 54:11-17, Bible, NKJV]

As Christians, we should prefer God’s protection over government’s protection at all times. This is because we should trust the Lord and not man:

*“It is better to trust the Lord
Than to put confidence in man.
It is better to trust in the Lord
Than to put confidence in princes.”
[Psalm 118:8-9, Bible, NKJV]*

Here is another example of why we should trust the Lord instead of government for our protection, right from the Bible:

*“For I was ashamed to request of the king an escort of soldiers and horsemen to help us against the enemy on the road, because we had spoken to the king, saying ‘The hand of our God is upon all those for good who seek Him, but His power and His wrath are against all those who forsake Him.’ So we fasted and entreated our God for this, and He answered our prayer.”
[Ezra 8:21-22, Bible, NKJV]*

When governments have the same loving goals as God in terms of protecting us (His children and His sheep/ flock) from evil and harm, then we are to submit to them. When they cease to be ministers of God’s justice or turn against God, then we should disobey those government laws that conflict with God’s laws or natural law.

*“We ought to obey God rather than men.”
[Acts 5:27-29, Bible, NKJV]*

This *must* be so because we have a fiduciary duty to God himself to keep justice, and when our *servants* in government don’t do it, then it becomes *our* job as the sovereigns to do the job they have failed to do as our agents:

*“**Keep justice, and do righteousness,** for My salvation is about to come, and My righteousness is revealed. Blessed is the man who does this, and the son of man who lays hold of it; who keeps from defiling the Sabbath, and keeps his hand from doing any evil.”
[Isaiah 56:1-2, Bible, NKJV]*

If we sit idly by and do nothing while our servants in government breach their fiduciary duty to protect us, then we become accountable to God for the acts and omissions of our agents and the harm that causes to our neighbor and our fellow man. This is vividly illustrated by the story of David and Bathsheba in the Bible found in 2 Samuel Chapters 11 and 12. In that story, king David lusted after a beautiful married woman named Bathsheba and had his servant send her husband Uriah into battle to be killed (See 2 Sam. 11:14-25). After Uriah was killed and David married Bathsheba, first the Lord killed the child born of adultery and then here is what the Lord said to David about the acts of his servant/agent, and note that God held David, not his servant, responsible for the murder:

*[Then Nathan said to David] "Why have you despised the commandment of the Lord, to do evil in His sight? You have killed Uriah the Hittite with the sword; you have taken his wife to be your wife, and you have killed him with the sword of the people of Ammon. Now therefore, the sword shall never depart from your house, because you have despised Me, and have taken the wife of Uriah the Hittite to be your wife."
[2 Sa 12:9, Bible, NKJV]*

Because both God and government have as their goal protection of their subjects or believers, you could say that both God and government are *competitors* for the affections of the people. This has been so throughout history. The whole notion behind the separation of church and state is aimed at making this competition fair and equal between these two competing sovereigns. That is why churches are not supposed to involve themselves in politics if they want to maintain their tax exempt status and why governments may not tax churches: because taxation by government of churches or political advocacy against government by churches would destroy that perfect separation of powers.

When government becomes too oppressive, then the healthy competition between church and state ensures a steady convergence back to the perfect balance of powers that Natural Law requires. For instance, if government raises its tax rates too high, then everyone will either donate everything they have to the church or become churches (Corporation Sole, for instance) in order to avoid government taxes and control. Likewise, when church gets to be too big, then the government tries to step in and pass laws and ordinances to limit its power or worse yet, creates its own state-sanctioned church, as the kings of England did with the Anglican church. In that case, the church becomes another means of state control. America was founded by Quakers in the 1600's who were trying to escape the control of the Anglican church and worship freely according to their conscience and without government interference.

When governments grow too big, the competition between church and state for the affections and loyalty of the public favors government. This imbalance is perpetuated by a combination of: 1. Media advocacy; 2. Unjust laws that discriminate against religious activities; 3. Dumbing down of the population in regards to religious issues and legal issues. Government thus becomes a substitute for God or an idol in this case, and this violates the First Commandment to put God first and have no other gods (see Exodus 20:1-11, Bible, NKJV). The focus of section 7.4.4 is to then prove from a legal perspective using evidence that our contemporary government has indeed replaced God and become an idol, and that this condition poses a great threat to our freedoms and liberties, and invites the wrath of God. Ultimately, the result will be subjection and slavery of the people to their rulers and a police state the likes of which this country has never seen. The people will be lead like lemmings into captivity and slavery because of their ignorance and lack of faith or trust in God.

"The Gentiles shall know that the house of Israel went into captivity for their iniquity: because they were unfaithful to Me, therefore I hid My face from them. I gave them into the hand of their enemies, and they all fell by the sword. According to their uncleanness

and according to their transgressions I have dealt with them, and hidden My face from them.” [Ezekiel 39:23-24, Bible, NKJV]

How has God “hidden his face”? By the outlawing of prayer in the schools, by the removal of the ten commandments and crosses from public buildings and parks, by the removal of religious teachings from our classrooms, and by the passing of government laws that clearly violate God’s laws.

7.4.3 The purpose of income taxes: government protection of the assets of the wealthy

Since those Americans who have accumulated great wealth benefit more from government than those who have little, it is logical to assume that the wealthy should pay more for government than the poor as the former enjoy a greater benefit. It is the “no free lunch” principle:

“Mr. COX. It is not my intention to belittle wealth, but, on the other hand, I believe it should be the duty of all to uphold it where it is honestly procured. The idea that men like Carnegie, now the holder of more than \$300,000,000 worth of the bonds of the United States steel trust, escape federal taxation is indeed absurd...and then, to realize that all of these enormous fortunes are escaping their just and proportionate share of taxation while the people themselves are staggering under our present system of indirect taxation, it is no wonder to me they cry for relief. If it be the determination of the so-called ‘business interests’ in this country to maintain an enormous navy at a cost of hundreds of millions of dollars annually, as well as an army, to protect and defend their various business interests, I insist that this part of the wealth of the country ought to stand its proportionate share of taxation, and I know of no way to compel them to do it as justly and equitably as an income tax. [Loud applause]”
[44 Cong.Rec. 4424 (1909)]

If you give it some thought, you’ll realize that it would be impossible to accumulate a lot of wealth if it were not for the institution of civil government. What if we lived in anarchy? How much would your stocks and bonds be worth? How much would your vacation home be worth that was hundreds of miles away from where you live? These things would be worth nothing. And what about your overseas investments in oil wells in Africa? If there were no United States navy, air force, or army to protect them, these investments would be worthless too.

So those corporations or businesses that have accumulated a level of wealth beyond what they can personally protect have received an extra benefit from civil government. In this case, the amount of benefit can be measured by the amount of property that has been accumulated. A tax on the income of this property could fairly accurately coincide with the degree of the benefit received. This was the original purpose of the income tax: to tax income from property of corporations and businesses so that the property paid for the support of the government in proportion to the benefit property received from the existence of civil government. Sounds reasonable to us:

“Taxation is the equivalent for the protection which the government affords to the persons and property of its citizens; and as all are alike protected, so all alike should bear the burden, in proportion to the interests secured. [Cooley’s Constitutional Limitations, 6th ed., 598, 607, 608, 615.]”
[Rehearing, Brief for Appellants at 79, Pollock v. Farmers’ Loan and Trust Co., 158 U.S. 601 (1895)]

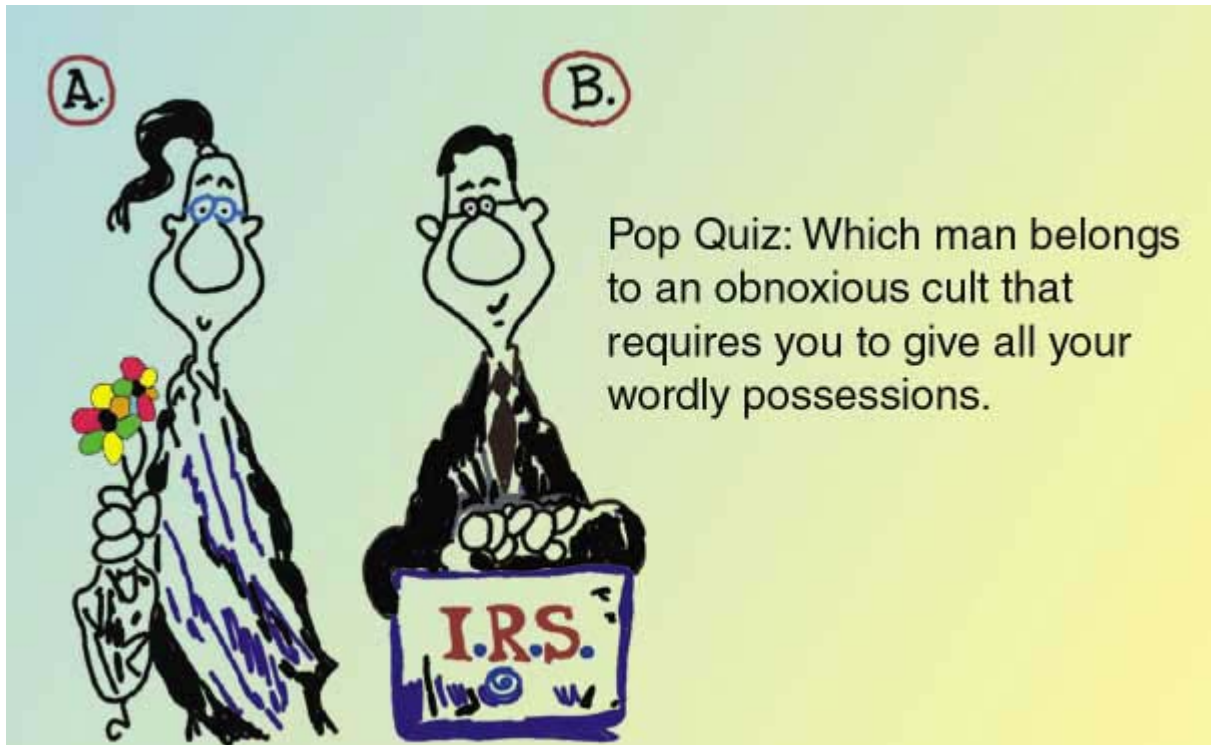
There is also an element of charity inherent in an income tax system that seeks to make property pay for the support of government. The charity involves property that is not productive and not producing

income. This would be the family farm that was inherited by beneficiaries who were unable to work it for whatever reason. The farm would pay no income tax as it earned no income, thus allowing the new owners to keep the farm and not lose it to the tax man as they might under a direct tax.

Because the Constitution has always authorized an indirect, unapportioned income tax on corporations involved in foreign and interstate trade under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 3, the means has always been available for the federal government to institute income taxes, with or without the Sixteenth Amendment. If you read the Congressional debates on the Sixteenth Amendment in 1909, you will find that the Sixteenth Amendment was originally introduced by Congress to make the “rich” pay their fair share of the cost of supporting the government. In most cases, the “rich” referred to were the large corporations and trusts that had formed as a result of the gigantic industrial monopolies in the oil, steel, and railroad businesses. The Democrats appealed to people’s jealousies by proposing to institute an income tax on the very rich owners of these trusts and corporations through a direct, unapportioned tax on property while the Republicans proposed higher indirect excise taxes in the Corporate Tax Act of 1909 to appease the Democrats. That Corporate Tax Act of 1909 wasn’t enough to appease the Democrats and the American people so the Sixteenth Amendment was proposed as a solution. Several versions of the Sixteenth Amendment were proposed during the Congressional debates in 1909, including a direct, unapportioned income tax. However, the version that included direct, unapportioned taxes was soundly defeated and the version we have today which survived, according to several rulings of the U.S. Supreme Court, continues to be an indirect excise tax on federal corporations only. The Sixteenth Amendment, as a matter of fact, conferred no new powers of taxation, according to the Supreme Court in *Stanton v. Baltic Mining*, 240 U.S. 103 (1916). See the following for additional details on the nature of the income tax as an indirect excise tax:

<http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/CitesByTopic/income.htm>

7.4.4 Government as idolatry/religion



“Tyranny is the inevitable consequence of rule from above, a point that the Founding Fathers understood well when they separated the powers of a small and restrained government.

“Liberty is a human achievement, the product of a 1,000-year struggle. We have taken too lightly our obligation to “earn it anew.” Consequently, we are ceasing to possess ‘that which thy fathers bequeathed thee.’ Our legislative political order has become an administrative state in which ‘We the People’ are increasingly fearful of the government that we allegedly control.

“If Thomas Jefferson was right, we cannot get self-rule back without a revolution.”
[Jeff Bowman]

God, in Exodus 20:3, as part of the Ten Commandments, said:

“You shall have no other gods before Me.”

Our life as Christians should revolve around putting God at the **top** of our priority list. That means supporting His causes with the **first** fruits of our labor and tithing to the church. Here’s the scripture to back up this assertion:

*“**Honor the Lord** with your possessions, and **with the firstfruits of all your increase**; so your barns will be filled with plenty, and your vats will overflow with new wine.”*
[Prov. 3:9-10]

But how can we tithe to the church and put God **first**, if we illegally pay almost 50% of our income to all the following combined taxes before God even gets his first dime in out tithes?:

1. Federal income tax (25% of our income).

2. State income tax. (15% of our income)
3. Property tax. (5% of our income)
4. Sales tax. (2% of our income)
5. Estate (Death) taxes. (up to 100% of our income and our assets over a lifetime!)

Instead, the first fruits of our labor and almost 50% of our living income (and 100% of our assets when we die) go to the GOVERNMENT first in the form of income taxes, before we ever even see a dime of our own income, and we put way too much emphasis and reliance on the government to help us. In effect, we allow or permit or volunteer ourselves to become government slaves and they become our masters and thus we lose our sovereignty and thereby make God of secondary importance, presumably because we want a hand-out and government “security”. But listen to what God says about this type of abomination:

“Cursed is the one who trusts in man, who depends on flesh for his strength and whose heart turns away from the Lord. He will be like a bush in the wastelands; he will not see prosperity when it comes. He will dwell in the parched places of the desert, in a salt land where no one lives. But blessed is the man who trusts in the Lord, whose confidence is in Him. He will be like a tree planted by the water that sends out its roots by the stream. It does not fear when heat comes; its leaves are always green. It has no worries in a year of drought and never fails to bear fruit.”
[Jeremiah 17:5-8, Bible, NIV]

By surrendering our sovereignty and letting government become our god, we have committed idolatry: relying more on government and man than we do on God or ourselves to meet our needs. Jesus Himself, however, specifically warned us not to do this:

*“Away with you , Satan! For it is written, ‘You shall worship the Lord your God, and Him **ONLY** [NOT the government!] you shall serve.’”*
[Matt. 4:10]

This kind of pernicious evil violates Psalm 118:8-9, which says: ***“It is better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in man. It is better to trust the Lord than to put confidence in princes.”*** I translate “princes” to mean “government”. Likewise, such idolatry also violates Psalm 146:3, which says: *“Put not your trust in princes, [nor] in the son of man, in whom [there is] no help. “*

But can government REALLY be a religion from a genuine legal perspective and can we prove this in court? Absolutely! Lets look at the definition of “religion” from Black’s Law Dictionary to answer this question, and notice the highlighted words:

***“Religion.** Man's relation to Divinity, to reverence, **worship**, obedience, and **submission to mandates and precepts** of supernatural or **superior beings**. In its broadest sense includes all forms of **belief in the existence of superior beings exercising power over human beings by volition, imposing rules of conduct, with future rewards and punishments.** **Bond uniting man to God, and a virtue whose purpose is to render God worship due him as source of all being and principle of all government of things.** *Nikulnikoff v. Archbishop, etc., of Russian Orthodox Greek Catholic Church, 142 Misc. 894, 255 N.Y.S. 653, 663.”*
*[Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 1292]**

Now we will take the highlighted words from this definition of “religion” above and put them into a table and compare worship of God on the left to worship of government on the right. The results are very surprising. The attributes in the left column of the table below are listed in the same sequence

presented in the above definition and have asterisks next to them. Those attributes without asterisks provide additional means of comparison between worship of God and worship of government (god with a little “g”).

Table 7-2: Worship of God (Christianity) v. Worship of Government (idolatry)

<i>Attributes of “religion”</i>	<i>Worship of God (Christianity: “God” with a Big “G”)</i>	<i>Worship of Government (Idolatry: “god” with a little “g”)</i>
<i>Lawgiver</i>	God (see Isaiah 33:22)	Legislature
<i>Method of rendering “worship”</i>	1. Faith 2. Prayer 3. Fasting 4. Service to fellow man/family 5. Reverencing (respecting) God	1. Paying income taxes 2. Surrendering rights to judicial jurisdiction and government authority 3. Not questioning or challenging authority.
<i>“Submission to mandates and precepts of”*</i>	God	Man (The Beast/Satan)
<i>“Superior being”*</i>	God	President/Congressmen/Mammon
<i>“Exercising power”*</i>	Church or clergy discipline, censure, or excommunication	Jurisdiction
<i>Source of power</i>	Love	Fear, insecurity
<i>“Rules of conduct”*</i>	God’s law (Bible or Natural Law)	Man’s law (statutes)
<i>“Future rewards”*</i>	Eternal life	Absence of IRS harassment for not paying taxes
<i>“Future punishment”*</i>	1. Slavery to sin for those who disobey. 2. Eternal damnation	Harassment, oppression for those who challenge government authority
<i>“Bond uniting man” to “superior being”*</i>	Love	Government- granted “Privileges”, covetousness, limited liability (in the case of corporations)
<i>Source of “virtue”*</i>	“God” and his worship	“Self” and “Vain Rulers” and their aggrandizement
<i>Object of belief/faith*</i>	Trust in God (see Psalm 118:8-9)	Trust in man/the flesh (see Jeremiah 17:5-8)
<i>Influence spread through</i>	Evangelizing	1. Fear, uncertainty, insecurity introduced through media and demagoguery. 2. Propaganda 3. Military and political warfare. 4. Bribing sheep into submission with government benefits derived from stolen/extorted tax money.
<i>Spokesperson</i>	Pope/prophet	Judge (witchdoctor)
<i>How spokespersons are appointed</i>	Ordained	Appointed by President/Governor
<i>Representatives of spokesperson</i>	Priests	Lawyers (Pharisees)
<i>How representatives are appointed</i>	Ordained	Licensed by state Supreme Court
<i>Persons who violate laws are</i>	Sinners (G od’s law)	Criminals (man’s/ g od’s law)
<i>Submission</i>	“...knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law but by faith in Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Christ Jesus, that we might be justified by faith in Christ and not by the works of the law; for by the works of the law no flesh shall be justified.” (see Gal.	“I am a criminal because no one can obey all of man’s laws. There are too many of them!”

Attributes of "religion"	Worship of God (Christianity: "God" with a Big "G")	Worship of Government (Idolatry: "god" with a little "g")
	2:16)	
Obedience	"If you love me, keep my commandments" (see John 14:15)	Follow the law or we will throw you in jail and steal your property! (fear)
Control by "superior being" imposed through	Holy Spirit/conscience	Criminal punishment for violating law.
Ultimate punishment exists in	Hell	Jail
Worship service	Sunday service	Court (worship the judge/lawyers)
Source of truth	God's law	Whatever the judge says
Truth is	Absolute and sovereign	Relative to whoever is in charge
Method of supporting "superior being"	Tithes (10%)	Taxes (50-100%)

Isn't that interesting? The other thing you MUST conclude after examining the above table is that if anyone in government is a "superior being" relative to any human in the society they govern, then the government unavoidably becomes an idol and a god to be worshipped and submitted to as if the government were a religion. This kind of idolatry not only violates the first and greatest Commandment in the bible found in Exodus 20:3 and Matt. 22:37-38, but is also more importantly violates the First Amendment to the U.S. Constitution:

***First Amendment:** Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof; or abridging the freedom of speech, or of the press; or the right of the people peaceably to assemble, and to petition the Government for a redress of grievances.*

By making itself a "superior being" relative to the people it governs and using the force of law to compel the people to pay homage to and "worship" it, Congress has mandated a religion, with all the many necessary characteristics found in the legal definition of "religion" indicated above, and this is clearly unconstitutional. The only way to guarantee the elimination of the conflict of law that results from putting government above the people is to:

1. Make God the sovereign over all of creation.
2. Make the people **servants to God** and His *fiduciary agents*.
3. Create government as a **servant to the People** and their fiduciary agent. Make the only source of government authority that of protecting the people from evil, injustice, and abuse.

There is no other rational conclusion one can reach based on the above analysis. There is simply no other way to solve this logical paradox of government becoming a religion in the process of making itself superior to the people or the "U.S. citizens".

I'll bet you never even dreamed that there were so many parallels between Christianity and government, did you? I'll bet you also never thought of government as a religion, but that is exactly what it has become. The idea of making government a religion or creating false idols for the people to worship is certainly not new. Leaders know that if you can get people to worship false idols and thereby blaspheme God with their sin, then you can use this idolatry to captivate and enslave them. For instance, in the Bible in 1 Kings Chapters 11 and 12, we learn that Solomon disobeyed the Lord by marrying foreign wives and worshipping the idols of these foreign wives. When Solomon died, his son Rehoboam hardened his heart against God and alienated his people. Then he fought a competitor named Jeroboam over the spoils of his vast father's remnant kingdom (1 Kings 12). The weapon that

Jeroboam used to compete with Rehoboam was the creation of a false idol for the ten tribes of Israel that were under his leadership. This false idol consisted of two calves of solid gold. The false idol distracted ten of the 12 tribes of Israel from wanting to reunite with the other two tribes and worship the true God. To this day, the twelve tribes have never again been able to reunite, because they were divided by idolatry toward false gods. Here is a description of how Jeroboam did it from 1 Kings 12:25-33:

Golden Calves at Bethel and Dan

²⁵ Then Jeroboam fortified Shechem in the hill country of Ephraim and lived there. From there he went out and built up Peniel.

²⁶ Jeroboam thought to himself, "The kingdom will now likely revert to the house of David. ²⁷ If these people go up to offer sacrifices at the temple of the LORD in Jerusalem, they will again give their allegiance to their lord, Rehoboam king of Judah. They will kill me and return to King Rehoboam."

²⁸ After seeking advice, the king made two golden calves. He said to the people, "It is too much for you to go up to Jerusalem. Here are your gods, O Israel, who brought you up out of Egypt." ²⁹ One he set up in Bethel, and the other in Dan. ³⁰ And this thing became a sin; the people went even as far as Dan to worship the one there.

³¹ Jeroboam built shrines on high places and appointed priests from all sorts of people, even though they were not Levites. ³² He instituted a festival on the fifteenth day of the eighth month, like the festival held in Judah, and offered sacrifices on the altar. This he did in Bethel, sacrificing to the calves he had made. And at Bethel he also installed priests at the high places he had made. ³³ On the fifteenth day of the eighth month, a month of his own choosing, he offered sacrifices on the altar he had built at Bethel. So he instituted the festival for the Israelites and went up to the altar to make offerings.
[1 Kings 12:25-33, Bible, NIV]

Similar to Jeroboam, our present government conquers the people by encouraging them to become distracted with false idols. These false idols include:

1. **Government.** This translates into worship of and slavery to government through the income tax and an obsession with petitioning government to protect people from discrimination or punishment for the consequences of their sins, including homosexuality, dishonesty, and infidelity.
2. **Money.** They use this lust for money to divide and conquer and control families by getting them fighting over money within their marriage. They encourage people to get marriage licenses they never needed in order to get jurisdiction over the spouses and their assets, and then they make it so easy to get divorced that it becomes economically attractive to marry people for their money. This means that people get married for all the wrong reasons, and make themselves into slaves of the state in the process of using the state courts as a vehicle to plunder their partner using community property laws.
3. **Sex.** A fixation with sex, homosexuality, fornication, and adultery. People who are obsessed with anything, and especially sex, are far less likely to be informed about the law or vigilant about holding their government accountable.
4. **Sports and television.** People who are hooked on Monday night football or the latest host soap or sitcom aren't likely to be caught visiting the law library or reading the Bible as God says they should.
5. **Materialism.** This manifests itself in an obsession to acquire and keep "things".
6. **Sin.** In the past, the government outlawed gambling and lotteries. Now most states have actually institutionalized this kind of sin. The government holds lotteries and even advertises them. Indian reservations have become havens for legalized gambling.

Have you ever visited a doctor's office for minor surgery? What the doctor does is administer a local anesthetic to numb your senses in the area he will be cutting and operating on so you won't experience pain or feel what he is doing. The government does the same thing. Before they hook you up to "The Matrix" using their umbilical called the "income tax" to painfully suck you dry, they use a "local

anesthetic” that numbs your senses and your discretion. This “local anesthetic” is the sin and hedonism and idolatry they try to get you addicted to and distracted with that they use to make you into a slave:

*“Most assuredly, I say to you, whoever commits sin is a slave of sin.”
[Jesus in John 8:34, Bible, NKJV]*

Once you are a slave to your sin, you are far less likely to give them any trouble about being a host organism for the umbilical they hook up to you called the income tax that sucks your life and your labor and your property dry. They supplement this local anesthetic with a combination of cognitive dissonance, lies and propaganda, ignorance generated by the public schools, and an occasional media report about how they trashed a famous person to keep you in fear and immobilized to oppose their organized extortion and racketeering. This trains you never to trust or respect your own judgment well enough to even conceive of questioning authority or challenging their jurisdiction.

*“Surely oppression destroys a wise man's reason.
And a [compelled] bribe [called income tax] debases the heart.”
[Ecclesiastes 7:7, Bible, NKJV]*

This concept of government as a religion especially applies to the field of taxation. The Internal Revenue Code is 9,500 pages of very fine print. We know because we have a personal copy and read it often. How many people have taken the time to read the Internal Revenue Code in its entirety, and even among those very few people who have read it completely, how many believe that they fully and completely understand it well enough to swear under penalty of perjury that facts they reveal and statements they might make about their own personal tax liability would be completely consistent with it? If you don’t meet these two criteria of having read it completely and often and having a full and accurate understanding about it that is truthful and consistent with its legislative intent, then any statement you make on a tax return that is based on your state of mind in that instance becomes simply a matter of usually misinformed or ignorant “belief”. There’s a good word for this condition of believing something without knowing all the facts. It is called “faith” and it is the foundation of all religions in the world!:

*“Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.”
[Heb. 11:1, Bible, NKJV]*

Isn’t “faith” based on a “belief” in something which you have not seen sufficient scientific evidence to prove? If you are like most Americans who have never read or even seen any part of the Internal Revenue Code, which is the only admissible “evidence” of your legal tax obligation, then any action you might take and any statement you might make regarding your tax “liability” under such circumstances could be rationally described only as an act of “faith” and “belief”. Here’s the legal definition of “faith”:

*“**Faith.** Confidence; credit; reliance. Thus, an act may be said to be done ‘on the faith’ of certain representations.*

*“**Belief; credence; trust.** Thus, the Constitution provides that ‘full faith and credit’ shall be given to the judgments of each state in the courts of the others.*

*Purpose; intent; sincerity; state of knowledge or design. This is the meaning of the word in the phrase “good faith” and “bad faith”. See Good faith.”
[Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 599]*

Even when you hire an expensive professional to prepare your tax return, you still have all of the responsibility and liability for the content and the accuracy of the return and if the IRS institutes a penalty for errors or omissions, isn't it you rather than your tax preparer who has to pay the penalty? What exactly are you "trusting" (see the definition of "faith" above) when you sign a tax return and state under penalty of perjury that it is truthful without even reading or knowing or understanding the tax laws? What you are in fact "trusting" is "man" or your "government". You are trusting what the IRS told you in its publications, right? Or you're trusting an ignorant and greedy and unethical tax lawyer or a misinformed accountant to tell you what your legal responsibilities are, aren't you? That is called trusting "man" because a man wrote those publications or gave you the advice that you formed your "belief" from. The Bible says we shouldn't trust men or a "worthless" government, and instead ought to trust only Him:

*"Cursed be he that confirmeth not all the words of this law [God's Law, not Caesar's law] to do them. And all the people shall say, Amen."
[Deu 27:26, Bible, NKJV]*

*"Behold, the nations are as a drop in the bucket, and are counted as the small dust on the scales."
[Isaiah 40:15, Bible, NKJV]*

*"All nations before Him are as nothing, and they are counted by Him less than nothing and worthless."
[Isaiah 40:17, Bible, NKJV]*

*"Cursed is the one who trusts in man [or by implication man-made government], who depends on flesh for his strength and whose heart turns away from the Lord. He will be like a bush in the wastelands; he will not see prosperity when it comes. He will dwell in the parched places of the desert, in a salt land where no one lives. But blessed is the man who trusts in the Lord, whose confidence is in Him. He will be like a tree planted by the water that sends out its roots by the stream. It does not fear when heat comes; its leaves are always green. It has no worries in a year of drought and never fails to bear fruit."
[Jeremiah 17:5-8, Bible, NIV]*

Now if our government had stuck to its original charter to be "a society of laws and not men", then we wouldn't be forced to have to depend on "men" to know what our tax responsibilities are because we would be able to read the law ourselves without consulting an "expert" and KNOW what we are supposed to do:

*"The government of the United States has been emphatically termed a government of laws, and not of men. It will certainly cease to deserve that high appellation, if the laws furnish no remedy for the violation of a vested legal right."
[Marbury v. Madison, [5 U.S. 137](#); 1 Cranch 137, 2 L.Ed. 60 (1803)]*

If our government had remained honorable and honest, the laws would be simple and clear and short. Read the earlier tax laws: they are very short and easy to understand. These laws were KNOWABLE by the common man. The easiest way to make the law respectable is to make it short and simple enough so that every person can read and understand it. When it grows too large and/or too complicated to be knowable by every citizen, then at that point, we have transformed our society from a society of laws to a society of men, which is the root and the foundation of tyranny and the very reason we rebelled against English monarchs to form this country! That kind of corruption of our laws began starting in around 1913, shortly after the Federal Reserve Act and the Sixteenth Amendment

were passed. At that point, our government became a gigantic parasite completely unrestrained by the Constitutional limits that had kept it under control. It became a socialist bureaucracy bent on destroying our liberties and making itself into a false god.

The IRS publications are the only thing that most Americans have ever read that even comes close to claiming to represent what is in the real tax law found in the Internal Revenue Code. Because most people can't afford a high-priced lawyer or accountant who understands the tax laws completely, and don't have the time to read the entire IRC or buy and read a comprehensive and complete book on taxes, then Americans in effect are economically coerced into relying on and having a "religious faith" in the IRS publications as their only source of the tax law. Add to that the legal ignorance perpetuated in them by our government schools and you have additional government duress. Worst yet, the federal courts have said that none of these IRS publications are credible and that they "confer no rights". Read the article on our website about this scam because it will blow your mind!:

<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/Articles/IRSNotResponsible.htm>

Even the IRS says you can't rely on their own publications in their Internal Revenue Manual:

"IRS Publications, issued by the National Office, explain the law in plain language for taxpayers and their advisors... While a good source of general information, publications should not be cited to sustain a position."
 [IRM, 4.10.7.2.8 (05-14-1999)]

So once again, if you haven't personally read the entire Internal Revenue Code, don't understand it completely, or have trusted the IRS publications, then your "faith" is ill-founded and in effect becomes "bad faith" because you are relying on a completely unaccountable, criminal, and lawless organization called the IRS to define and fulfill your purported legal responsibilities, and that can only be described as despicable, morally wrong, and biblically unsound:

*"**Bad faith.** The opposite of 'good faith,' generally implying or involving actual or constructive fraud, or a design to mislead or deceive another, or a neglect or refusal to fulfill some duty or some contractual obligation, not prompted by an honest mistake as to one's rights or duties, but by some interested or sinister motive. Term 'bad faith' is not simply bad judgment or negligence, but rather it implies the conscious doing of a wrong because of dishonest purpose or moral obliquity; it is different from the negative idea of negligence in that it contemplates a state of mind affirmatively operating with furtive design or ill will..."*
 [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 139]

You are not alone in your compelled depravity and violation of God's law because most Americans, including us, are just like you. But you have to trust "somebody" on this tax subject don't you, because if you don't file the government is going to go after you and penalize you, aren't they? So you are compelled to have "faith" in something, right? You get to choose what that "something" is, but the result is a compelled "faith" or "trust" in "something" because of demands the government is making on you to satisfy your alleged tax responsibilities.

Now if the Constitution says in the First Amendment that "*Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof*", and yet the IRS tells you under the "color of law" that you have to in effect trust or have "religious faith" in "something" in order to satisfy their criminal extortion under the "color of law", then isn't the government in effect "making a law respecting the establishment of a religion"? When corrupt judges make rulings on tax issues that

violate the Constitution and prejudice our sacred rights, aren't they making law? Isn't this kind of judicial activism called "judge-made law" and isn't Congress' failure to discipline such tyrant judges the equivalent of allowing them to write law that will then be used as precedent in the future? Isn't the object of that "religious faith" and "trust" that the government compels us to have the fraudulent IRS Publications directly, and the IRS who prepares them indirectly? So in effect, if the income tax is indeed an "enforced" or "compelled" tax, then the government has established "faith in the IRS" as a religion by the operation of law. And then the federal courts of that same government have turned around and said that even though the only basis for most people's beliefs is the IRS publications, they aren't trustworthy nor credible, and in fact, you can be penalized for relying on what the IRS told you in them! So you are in effect being compelled to trust or have "religious faith" in a lie, aren't you? But then out of the other side of that same hypocritical and criminal government's mouth, the U.S. supreme Court says:

"Courts, no more than the Constitutions, can intrude into the consciences of men or compel them to believe contrary to their faith or think contrary to their convictions, but courts are competent to adjudge the acts men do under the color of a constitutional right, such as that of freedom of speech or of the press or the free exercise of religion and to determine whether the claimed right is limited by other recognized powers, equally precious to mankind. So the mind and the spirit of man remain forever free, while his actions rest subject to necessary accommodation to the competing needs of his fellows."

"If all expression of religion or opinion, however, were subject to the discretion of authority, our unfettered dynamic thoughts or moral impulses might be made only colorless and sterile ideas. To give them life and force, the Constitution protects their use. No difference of view as to the importance of the freedoms of press or religion exist. They are "fundamental personal rights and liberties" Schneider v. State, 308 U.S. 147, 161, 60 S.Ct. 146, 150, 84 L.Ed. 155. To proscribe the dissemination of doctrines or arguments which do not transgress military or moral limits is to destroy the principal bases of democracy, --knowledge and discussion. One man, with views contrary to the rest of his compatriots, is entitled to the privilege of expressing his ideas by speech or broadside to anyone willing to listen or to read. ..."

"Ordinances absolutely prohibiting [or penalizing] the exercise of the right to disseminate information are, a fortiori, invalid."

[Jones v. City of Opelika, 316 U.S. 584; 62 S.Ct. 1231 (1942), Emphasis added]

And when we raise the issue in court that the payment of federal income taxes violates our religious beliefs as documented here, then the courts frequently say that our arguments are "frivolous". See U.S. v. Lee, 455 U.S. 252 (1982) for further confirmation of how the government essentially labels our religious beliefs as being frivolous in the process of enforcing their "love for your money" in the courts. That too is a government action to create a religion, because all of the arguments here are based on the law and words right out of the mouths of the government's own judges and lawyers. Indirectly, they are saying that their own words are frivolous! That's religion and idolatry, and the object of worship is the almighty dollar. The result of them calling our claims "frivolous" is a maximization of federal revenues and personal retirement benefits of federal judges through illegal and unconstitutional extortion. That too violates Christian beliefs, which say that "covetousness" is idolatry, which is the religious worship of idols:

"Therefore put to death your members which are on the earth: fornication, uncleanness, passion, evil desire, and covetousness, which is idolatry.."
[Colossians 3:5, Bible, NKJV]

“Behold, to obey [God and His Law] is better than sacrifice, and to heed than the fat of rams. For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is an iniquity and idolatry. Because you have rejected the word of the Lord, He also has rejected you from being king [or sovereign over government].”

[1 Sam. 15:22-28, Bible, NKJV]

The implication of the above scripture is that when the government violates God’s law, they cease to be part of the government and are acting as *private individuals* absent the authority of law. They are no longer the sovereigns who are serving the public they are there to protect. Instead they are serving *themselves* mainly and thereby violating the fiduciary relationship they have as part of the public trust known as the “United States government” (see section 7.4.8 earlier for details). Christians are supposed to disobey such unlawful and immoral actions, including those of courts.

“We ought to obey God rather than men.”

[Acts 5:27-29, Bible, NKJV]

So we have a paradox, folks. Either Subtitle A income taxes are *mandatory* and *enforced* and “religious faith in the IRS” has become the new religion, or the taxes are instead entirely “voluntary” donations and therefore do not conflict with religious views or the First Amendment. We can’t have it both ways, but the government’s fraudulent way of calling them *mandatory* conflicts with so many aspects of our Constitution that we may as well throw the whole Bill of Rights in the toilet and tell everyone the truth: which is that all their freedoms are suspended to pay for the extravagant debts of an out-of-control government and everyone is an economic slave and a serf to the government.

In our time, government has not only become a religion, it has also become an *anti-religion* intent on driving Christianity out of public life so that its only competitor (God) can be eliminated and it can continue to grow in power without resistance and graduate to that of a totalitarian communist state. Christianity, it turns out, is the *only* competitor to government at the moment for the worship of the people, and the one thing that most minority groups focused on rights (homosexuals, women’s liberation, abortion, etc) have in common is a hate for Christianity, because Christianity is the only check on their corruption and hedonism. Christianity is the salt, the preservative, and the immune system for our society, and when you want to overtake society with sin and disease and death, the first thing you have to attack is its immune system.

The kind of idolatrous thinking that accepts the income tax as legal therefore leads to socialism ultimately, and turns the government into a tyrannical police state that robs citizens of their assets and puts them to use for the alleged “common good.” It is a product of mobocracy masquerading as democracy, where less privileged or poorer groups use their voting power to compel the government to plunder the assets of wealthier people for their personal benefit. This is the central approach the demagogues (I mean democrats) use: buy votes with money extorted from hard-working citizens. The Supreme Court agreed precisely with these conclusions below in the case of ***Loan Association v. Topeka, 20 Wall. 655*** (1874):

“To lay with one hand the power of government on the property of the citizen, and with the other to bestow it on favored individuals.. is none the less robbery because it is done under the forms of law and is called taxation. This is not legislation. It is a decree under legislative forms.”

The only way a socialist state can justify its existence is to assert that the government knows better how to take care of you than you do, and past experience, especially with the Soviet Union, proves that approach *doesn't work!* Forcing you to have "faith" in the government is a violation of the First Amendment by establishing government as a "religion". Worship of government as a religion is the essence of socialism. Socialism has never worked throughout all of history, because the corruption of men at the highest levels who are in charge of the public funds always leads to usury, abuse, evil, and tyrannical oppression of the people they are supposed to serve.

"Remember the word that I said to you , 'A servant is not greater than his master.' If they persecuted Me, they will also persecute you. If they kept My word, they will keep yours also. But all these things they will do to you for My name's sake, because they do not know Him who sent Me."

[Jesus speaking in the Bible, John 15:20-21]

Our own country was formed by Christian patriots more than 200 years ago because they rejected this very thing happening to us! They founded the first country whose legal system was based entirely on Natural Law and Natural Order, which we further explain in section 7.2.

Socialism also makes us into unwitting slaves of the government. Would anyone argue that we don't already have a police state, where the Gestapo are the tyrants at the IRS, and fear of the IRS is what keeps us paying our "tribute to the king" in the form of income taxes? Would anyone argue that we are not a country full of cowards when it comes to facing our oppressors? Realistically speaking: How long can cowards remain free and sovereign? Remember that the original American colonies waged an entire violent war of independence and risked everything they had to fight against Britain when their taxes to Britain were only 7%? Now some of us are paying 50% of our income in taxes without even flinching or whimpering or fighting. We're a bunch of wimps if you ask me!

The point is that it's much more difficult to put God first with federal income taxes because out of the remaining 50% of our income left after we pay taxes, we have to feed our families and pay our bills. Is it any wonder then that less than 1% of Christians tithe 10% of their income to the church as the bible requires in Malachi 3:8-10? They can't afford to because they are being taxed/raped and financially enslaved by the government illegally! And then the IRS compels churches to shut up about this kind of abuse by taking away their tax-exempt status if they speak up!

But if you didn't have to pay income taxes and the IRS would honor your right to do so legally (why does the IRS call it "voluntary compliance" if we can't choose not to pay?), wouldn't you give MUCH more to God and put God first? I certainly would! Therefore, implementing the advice found in this document will, in the long run, result in equipping you with the income you need to be more generous to your local church and to the noble causes and preservation of American liberties and freedoms that we all believe in.

HOWEVER: *If your intent is to take the money you saved in taxes as a result of following the guidance in this document and spend it on your own selfish desires and not on the church (whatever church you belong to) or helping others, then you are violating the copyright on this document and acting illegally. We demand that you destroy this book and **NOT** read or use this document because we would submit that you are a less than honorable steward over the gracious gifts that God (whatever God you believe in) has bestowed upon you and deserve to have your income taken away by the tyrants at the IRS. Selfishness and deceit are their own best avengers, and we should rightly reap what we sow. Anything less would be to promote anarchy, hypocrisy, injustice, and oppression in our society.*

Recall that it was selfishness and vanity on the part of government employees which created the problems so clearly documented in this book to begin with. You can't cure selfishness with more selfishness, and you will be maligning the tax honesty movement and other noble patriots by abusing these materials for your own selfish gain and associating yourself with them in so doing.

The above comment is based on the following scriptures:

"A man with an evil eye hastens after riches, and does not consider that poverty will come upon him."

[Prov. 28:22, Bible, NKJV]

"Do not lay up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy and where thieves [the IRS and the government] break in and steal; but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust destroys and where thieves do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also."

[Matt. 6:19-21, Bible, NKJV]

Now some of you, in fear, might say that we need to obey the government and not make any noise. *When should a Christian disobey the civil government? (Rom. 13:7; Acts 5:27-29) When a civil government refuses people the liberty to worship and obey God freely or violates God's law, it has lost its mandate of authority from God. Then the Christian should feel justified and maybe even compelled in disobeying. How are we to worship God freely? With the first fruits of our labor and our income!*

Ben Franklin, who incidentally was one of the attendees at the Constitutional Convention, believed that when a government began to be tyrannical, it was the right and even the DUTY of the citizens to rebel against that government. Here is what he said:

"Resistance to tyrants is obedience to God."

The Christian, however, is called to bear with his government whenever possible, but there must be a limit to that forbearance.

"Those who stand for nothing will fall for anything." Alex Hamilton

Jesus did not call for revolution against Rome, even though it was an oppressive conqueror of Israel. On the other hand, the apostles refused to obey a government order not to preach and teach in Jesus' name (Acts 5:27-29). On that occasion, one of Jesus' apostles said:

"We ought to obey God rather than men."

Whenever the civil government forbids the practice of things that God has commanded us to do, or tells us to do things He has commanded us not to do, then we are on solid ground in disobeying the government. Blind obedience to government is never right or biblically sound. However difficult or costly it may be, we all must reserve the right to say no to things that we consider oppressive or immoral or sinful. If we don't and we make government our unquestioned god, here is the future that awaits us.⁹⁰

The 23rd Psalm (A present-day Lamentation)

⁹⁰ A parody of the Bible, Psalm 23. Submitted by Pastor Wayne Teel and authored by Bob Phillips in his book *The Best of the Good Clean Jokes*.

*The politician is my shepherd...I am in want;
 He maketh me to lie down on park benches,
 He leadeth me beside still factories;
 He disturbeth my soul.
 Yea, thou I walk through the valley of the shadow of depression and recession,
 I anticipate no recovery, for he is with me.
 He prepareth a reduction in my salary in the presence of my enemies;
 He anointeth my small income with great losses;
 My expenses runneth over.
 Surely unemployment and poverty shall follow me all the days of my life,
 And I shall dwell in a mortgaged house forever.*

7.4.5 **Socialism is Incompatible with Christianity**

*"The American people will never knowingly adopt socialism. But, under the name of "liberalism", they will adopt every fragment of the socialist program, until one day America will be a socialist nation, without knowing how it happened."
 [Norman Thomas, for many years the U.S. Socialist Party presidential candidate]*

*"We cannot expect the Americans to jump from Capitalism to Communism, but we can assist their elected leaders in giving Americans small doses of Socialism, until they suddenly awake to find they have Communism."
 [Nikita Krushchev, Premiere of the former Soviet Union, 3-1/2 months before his first visit to the United States]*

*"But why, you might ask, should the richest people in the world promote a socialistic system? The answer appears to be that under socialism the state owns everything, and these people intend, quite simply, to own the state. It is the neatest and completest way of bagging the lot!"
 [W.D. Chalmers in "The Conspiracy Of Truth"]*

*"Socialism is not in the least what it pretends to be. It is not the pioneer of a better and finer world, but the spoiler of what thousands of years of civilization have created. It does not build, it destroys. For destruction is the essence of it. It produces nothing, it only consumes what the social order based on private ownership in the means of production has created."
 [Ludwig von Mises ("Socialism", 1922)]*

The Supreme Court ruled in the case of **Helvering v. Davis**, [301 U.S. 619](#) (1937) and **Flemming v. Nestor**, [363 U.S. 603](#) (1960), that Social Security (and by implication all other government social programs!) are **NOT** insurance and are **NOT** a contract. The government isn't obligated to pay you back **anything**, much less even the amount of money you put into any social (or should we say **socialist?**) program (see section **Error! Reference source not found.** for further details on this). Because Social Security is therefore not insurance and not a trust fund, then what should Christians view it as? It is theft, plain and simple!

Social Security is socialism. Socialism is theft. Theft is a sin. There was never a promise to pay benefits. Rights can only come from responsibilities. You won't understand this yet, but those who accept public benefits cannot have rights. The Supreme Court agreed precisely with these conclusions below:

"To lay with one hand the power of government on the property of the citizen, and with the other to bestow it on favored individuals.. is none the less robbery because it is done

under the forms of law and is called taxation. This is not legislation. It is a decree under legislative forms."

[*Loan Association v. Topeka*, 20 Wall. 655 (1874)]

"A tax, in the general understanding of the term and as used in the constitution, signifies an exaction for the support of the government. The word has never thought to connote the expropriation of money from one group for the benefit of another."

[*U.S. v. Butler*, [297 U.S. 1](#) (1936)]

"A statutory provision which is not a legitimate police regulation cannot be made such by being placed in the same act with a police regulation, or by being enacted under a title that declares a purpose which would be a proper object for the exercise of that power."

"It being self-evident that, unless all things are held in common, some persons must have more property than others, it is from the nature of things impossible to uphold freedom of contract and the right of private property without at the same time recognizing as legitimate those inequalities of fortune that are the necessary result of the exercise of those rights."

"The Fourteenth Amendment recognizes "liberty" and "property" as coexistent human rights, and debars the states from any unwarranted interference with either."

"Since a state may not strike down the rights of liberty or property directly, it may not do so indirectly, as by declaring in effect that the public good requires the removal of those inequalities that are but the normal and inevitable result of the exercise of those rights, and then invoking the police power in order to remove the inequalities, without other object in view."

"The Fourteenth Amendment debars the states from striking down personal liberty or property rights or materially restricting their normal exercise excepting so far as may be incidentally necessary for the accomplishment of some other and paramount object, and one that concerns the public welfare. The mere restriction of liberty or of property rights cannot, of itself, be denominated "public welfare" and treated as a legitimate object of the police power, for such restriction is the very thing that is inhibited by the Amendment."

[*Coppage v. Kansas*, 236 U.S. 1 (1915)]

The reason why the Supreme Court ruled the way it did above is because:

"Democracy is a form of government that cannot long survive, for as soon as the people learn that they have a voice in the fiscal policies of the government, they will move to vote for themselves all the money in the treasury, and bankrupt the nation".

[***Karl Marx, 1848 author of "The Communist Manifesto"***]

What protects us as Americans from the above excesses of democracy and mobocracy is the mandate imposed in Article 4, Section 4 of the U.S. Constitution to provide a Republican Government, which by implication is based on individual rather than collective sovereignty and rights:

*"The United States shall **guarantee** to every State in this Union a **Republican** Form of Government..."*

The U.S. Supreme Court in the landmark case of *Pollock v. Farmers Loan and Trust*, [157 U.S. 429](#) (1895), which outlawed income taxes legislated by Congress, said the following regarding what happens when the government becomes a robinhood and tries to promote equality of result rather than equality of opportunity. We end up with class warfare, in society done using the force of law and a mobocracy mentality:

“The present assault upon capital is but the beginning. It will be but the stepping stone to others larger and more sweeping, until our political contest will become war of the poor against the rich; a war of growing intensity and bitterness.

...

The legislation, in the discrimination it makes, is class legislation. Whenever a distinction is made in the burdens a law imposes or in the benefits it confers on any citizens by reason of their birth, or wealth, or religion, it is class legislation, and leads inevitably to oppression and abuses, and to general unrest and disturbance in society.”

Federal funds are not available to ordinary persons. Only indigents can qualify to receive federal benefits. It is highly unlikely that you ever qualified for a Social Security Card. [Section 205\(c\)\(2\)\(B\)\(i\) of the Social Security Act](#) allows government to assign Social Security Numbers to applicants for benefits financed with government funds. Unless you need federal benefits, Social Security Cards are not available to you. You cannot qualify for a number. That's right! SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBERS ARE NOT AVAILABLE TO THOSE WHO CAN PROVIDE FOR THEMSELVES. If you can still provide for yourself, or if your family or church or state can support you, it would be fraud to apply for federal benefits.

Let me repeat this essential fact in several ways, until you understand: The application for an SS Card (the [SS-5 form](#)) is a form limited to a very specific purpose. It is only for indigents who need federal funds. People who can provide for themselves cannot be indigent. Social Security Cards cannot be issued to anyone until they apply for federal benefits. The government cannot know who is destitute; they must wait for applicants desperate enough to apply for federal funds. It must be voluntary. Social Security has no trust fund; it is solely a handout. It is limited to government wards. Only socialists can qualify for a card. ONLY THOSE WHO CANNOT SUPPORT THEMSELVES AND ARE WILLING TO ACCEPT SOCIALISM AND WILLING TO SWEAR SO WITH A PERJURY OATH ON A PERMANENT IRREVOCABLE RECORD, CAN QUALIFY TO RECEIVE A SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER.

To remain constitutional, only wards of the government can receive benefits. This is a vow of poverty. You exchanged your rights to all future wages for the false promise of future benefits. You did so voluntarily. I'll discuss labor rights and poverty vows and taxable wages in other chapters.

According to the legal definition of "Tacit Procuration", you grant them the power of attorney if you expect them to provide for you. You asked them to provide for you - To steal for you. Government does not and cannot create wealth, it must tax in order to give. Government cannot provide benefits unless it takes them from someone else. Socialism is theft of your neighbor's money. Your new master will take money from your neighbors, against their will, and over their objections. These civil servants will eventually resort to the force of guns, on your behalf, to seize property from any neighbor who stubbornly and repeatedly refuses to hand over whatever is demanded. It is theft. They call it distraint. It is not insurance. Proverbs 1:10-19 gives us advice about those who entrap the innocent to fill their house with plunder.

In Matt 20:25-27 and Mark 10:42-43 and Luke 22:25-27 Jesus tells us to not have dominion over others, but to serve. CHRISTIANS SERVE. CHRISTIANS DON'T LORD over those who are not under them. Not by force, not by vote, not by hiring a servant and then delegating to the servant an authority to steal - an authority that you don't have. Again: Christians don't have dominion over their neighbors. You cannot tax your neighbors to fund your retirement, and that's exactly what you are doing by collecting a Social Security Check, because the government isn't paying back the money you put in. As a matter of fact, it pays back many times the value of the money you put in and doesn't maintain a trust balance at all. Everything it takes in is paid right back out to beneficiaries!

Since there is no trust fund (nor can there be one) - Only by the deepest commitment to covetousness can you force others to pay for your retirement (or pay your doctor bills, or pay to educate your children). You are coveting your neighbors' goods. You are forcing your dominion over those who are not subject to your authority, contrary to Christ's command.

Conversely, if your bank account and property can be seized to pay for your neighbor's retirement (or doctor bills or tuition), then you must have somehow lost your right to keep `your' property or money. What do you suppose that you signed to waive any right to keep `your' property?

Have you become surety for the debts of a stranger? The security in Social Security is social. Look up "social insurance" in a law dictionary. You have become surety for your neighbor. Proverbs 11:15 "He that is surety for a stranger shall smart for it: and he that hateth suretiship is sure." Also: Proverbs 17:18

Only wards of the government (card carrying socialists) can receive the benefits of National Socialism.

SS is not a trust fund or insurance, it is an excise tax on the benefits of a limited citizenship (including the government granted privilege of earning wages). This tax revenue goes into the general fund. Authority for this taxation comes from the Buck Act, not the Internal Revenue Code. It is presumed, but not required, that congress will appropriate funds each year for maintenance of the government wards. The Supreme Court ruled in 1980 that Social Security benefits are not based on a fixed contract and therefore can change or be eliminated at any time. *Fleming v. Nestor*, 80 SCt 1367.

In the 1891 naturalization case of Mr. Sauer, Title 81 Federal Reporter page 358 the court held that Mr. Sauer, although an industrious, law abiding man, could not become a citizen because he claimed to be a Socialist. Socialists could not become citizens. And they still cannot. I have another chapter that cites every court case where people were forced to get Social Security numbers. Every case is a welfare applicant. Social Security Numbers are only for socialists. Socialists cannot have rights. Read Appendix C of *Social Security: Mark of the Beast* (<http://famguardian.org/Publications/SocialSecurity/TOC.htm>) and prove to yourself that they have changed their citizenship and are not protected by the first eight amendments to your Constitution (Hague case) and do not have the right to a trial by jury (Colegate case). If you want to loose your birthright just fill out a form claiming socialist benefits. If you think you still have a right to a trial by jury, read Appendix F of Mark of the Beast.

A Christian cannot be a socialist. Christians are not to associate with freeloaders, according to 2nd Thessalonians 3:6-14:

2nd Thessalonians 3:6 (NIV): In the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, we command you, brothers, to keep away from every brother who is idle and does not live according to the teaching you received from us.

3:7 For you yourselves know how you ought to follow our example. We were not idle when we were with you,

3:8 nor did we eat anyone's food without paying for it. On the contrary, we worked night and day, laboring and toiling so that we would not be a burden to any of you.

3:9 We did this, not because we do not have the right to such help, but in order to make ourselves a model for you to follow.

3:10 For even when we were with you, we gave you this rule: "If a man will not work, he shall not eat." I want to interject a note here: this isn't a snobbish threat to starve the poor, it is a fundamental Biblical principle. In the same sentence where God condemned us to die, he condemned us to work for food. That's right! To acknowledge socialism is to deny God's authority. Genesis 3:19 (KJV): "In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return." The socialists that want you to provide not only their food but also health care, deny God's authority to sentence us to hardships.

3:11 We hear that some among you are idle. They are not busy; they are busybodies.

3:12 Such people we command and urge in the Lord Jesus Christ to settle down and earn the bread they eat.

3:13 And as for you, brothers, never tire of doing what is right.

3:14 If anyone does not obey our instruction in this letter, take special note of him. Do not associate with him, in order that he may feel ashamed."

That the freeloader may feel ashamed. I've been told that I am too sarcastic just because I quote the Bible.

Do not confuse voluntary charity with forced socialism. Christians are often in need of charity, yet cannot accept socialism.

"We have rights, as individuals, to give as much of our own money as we please to charity; but as members of Congress we have no right so to appropriate a dollar of public money."

[David Crockett, Congressman 1827-35]

Does the Bible support the notion that socialism can provide for Christians? Let's take a closer look:

- 1st Thessalonians 2:9 (NIV): " Surely you remember, brothers, our toil and hardship; we worked night and day in order not to be a burden to anyone ..."
- 1st Thessalonians 4:11-12 "work with your hands...so that you will not be dependent on anybody."
- 1st Corinthians 4:11 (NIV): "To this very hour we go hungry and thirsty, we are in rags, we are brutally treated, we are homeless." [note: they were homeless but they were not freeloaders. Even Christ was homeless, Matt 8:20, Luke 9:58.]
- Proverbs 10:26: (NKJV) "As vinegar to the teeth and smoke to the eyes, so is the lazy man to those who send him."
- Proverbs 20:4: (NKJV): "The lazy man will not plow because of winter; he will beg during harvest and have nothing."
- Proverbs 21:25 (KJV): "The desire of the slothful killeth him; for his hands refuse to labour."
- Ephesians 4:28 (NIV): "He who has been stealing must steal no longer, but must work, doing something useful with his own hands, that he may have something to share with those in need."
- Acts 14:22 (NIV) ... "We must go through many hardships to enter the kingdom of God," [You will understand this after you study the topic of citizenship]
- Luke 19:26 (NIV): "He replied, 'I tell you that to everyone who has, more will be given, but as for the one who has nothing, even what he has will be taken away.'"
- 2nd Corinthians 11:9 (NIV) "And when I was with you and needed something, I was not a burden to anyone,... I have kept myself from being a burden to you in any way, and will continue to do so."
- 2nd Corinthians 7:2 (NIV) "... we have exploited no one. "

- Jesus is quoted in Matthew 25:29-30 (KJV) "For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath. And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."
- Proverbs 13:4 (NIV) "The sluggard craves and gets nothing, but the desires of the diligent are fully satisfied."
- Proverbs 20:4 (KJV) "The sluggard will not plow by reason of the cold; therefore shall he beg in harvest, and have nothing."

If a Christian cannot be a socialist, then a Christian cannot have an ID card available only to socialists. Theodore Roosevelt:

"The first requisite of a citizen in this Republic of ours, is that he shall be able and willing to pull his own weight."

As further proof that socialists have never had rights, in Appendix C of *Social Security: Mark of the Beast* read where the Articles of Confederation extended the rights of citizenship to inhabitants with the exceptions of paupers and vagabonds and fugitives. A vagrant is not a vagabond. Even Christ was homeless (Matt 8:20, Luke 9:58). A vagabond is a homeless freeloader. A pauper is a person that must be supported at public expense. Social Security partakers are supported at public expense, therefore cannot have the rights of citizens anymore than a fugitive would have.

The English word "stigma" comes from the Greek and, in English, means a mark of shame or a brand of disgrace. The third six in 666 is the Greek *stigma* (666= *chi-xi-stigma*). The mark is not necessarily a tattoo or implant. Do you have a permanent mark of shame?

Conclusions so far: There is no Social Security trust fund, there is no insurance, and there is no pension. It is plunder. It is pure orthodox socialism. Socialists are not and cannot become citizens. Socialists cannot have rights. Never could, still can't. Christians cannot be socialists. Christians cannot have socialist ID. Did your government school teach you this?

PUBLIC EDUCATION

Karl Marx wrote the *Communist Manifesto* in 1848. Public schools is the 10th plank. As I said earlier: Those who accept public benefits cannot have rights. Rights can only come from responsibilities. You have no right to force others to pay your children's tuition. Hillary Clinton's village will raise the children of those who forfeit their rights to their own children. Even the U.S. Supreme Court in *Meyer v. Nebraska*, [262 US 390](#) (1923), concluded

"it is the natural duty of the parent to give his children education suitable to their station in life..."

The U.S. Supreme Court in *Plyler v. Doe*, [457 US 202](#) (1982), concluded,

- "...education is not a fundamental right..."
- "the Fourteenth Amendment's protection extends to anyone, citizen or stranger, who is subject to the laws of a State..."

US Congressman in the 1840's Robert Dale Owen, later known as the father of American socialism, believed that the Christian faith hindered man's evolution. An Owen associate wrote:

"The great object was to get rid of Christianity and to convert our churches into halls of science... the plan was not to make open attacks upon religion - although we might belabor the clergy and bring them into contempt where we could ... but to establish a

system of state - we said national - schools... from which all religion would be excluded and to which all parents were to be compelled by law to send their children."

These views influenced John Dewey at the Columbia Teacher's College, and by 1900 a socialist system of compulsory schools, which exclude religion, became a reality.

SUMMARY

The seven-headed scarlet beast is a socialist confederation of beast powers that raised up from the sea. The sea symbolizes multitudes of people (Rev 17:5). Seas of people (democracies) demand socialist benefits. These people received not the love of the truth that they might be saved. They want to be taken care of, but not by God. They won't accept the responsibility to take care of themselves, or suffer God's trials. They fabricated a counterfeit image of God [the government] to provide for them and protect them. They get their rights from their god that they created. This is without a doubt idolatry and the new god is government. Here is the way one of our readers described it:

*"The people want 'Zeus' and 'Gods'/'gods' --- paganism!
'They' got PAY-GUN-ISM!!!"*
[<http://www.bayith-yvh.org/index.Segmented~1.htm.html>]

They expect you to worship their counterfeit image of God. In their courts, your rights come from the god they created.

Abraham Lincoln, September 11, 1858: "Accustomed to trampling on the rights of others, you have lost the genius of your own independence and become the fit subjects of the first cunning tyrant who rises among you."

If you want to learn more about the subject of this section, we refer you to a document entitled: *Social Security: Mark of the Beast*, which you can freely download and read at:

<http://famguardian.org/Publications/SocialSecurity/TOC.htm>

7.4.6 Government-instituted slavery using "privileges"

"In the matter of taxation, every privilege is an injustice." -- Voltaire

"The more you want, the more the world can hurt you." Confucius

"If you think of yourselves as helpless and ineffectual, it is certain that you will create a despotic government to be your master. The wise despot, therefore, maintains among his subjects a popular sense that they are helpless and ineffectual."
[Frank Herbert, *The Dosadi Experiment*]

Anyone who has been married instinctively knows what "privilege-induced slavery" is. They understand that you have to give up some of your "rights" for the benefits and "privileges" associated with being married. For instance, one of the rights that the government forces you to give up using the instrument it created called the "marriage license", especially if you are a man, is sovereignty over your property and your labor. As we said in the previous section, if you get married with a state marriage license, then control over your property and labor is surrendered ultimately to the government, because if your spouse becomes dissatisfied, the marriage license gives the government absolute authority to hijack all your property and your labor for the imputed "public good", but as you

will find out, the chief result of this hijacking is actually injustice . The marriage license authorizes a family law judge to abuse your property and your labor without your voluntary consent to create a welfare state for women intent on rebelling against their husbands and using marriage as a means of economic equalization. We explain in our book entitled *Sovereign Christian Marriage* that this very characteristic of marriage licenses issued by the state accomplishes the following unjust results:

- Usurps and rebels against the sovereignty of God by interfering with His plan for marriage and family clearly spelled out in the Bible.
- Encourages spouses to get divorced, because at least one of them will be financially rewarded with the property and labor of the other for doing so.
- Makes marriage into legalized prostitution, where the sex comes *during* the marriage and the money comes *after* marriage and the state and family court judge becomes the pimp and the family law attorneys become tax collectors for the pimp.

The above defects in the institution of marriage caused by state-issued marriage licenses, of course, are the natural result of violating God's/Natural law on marriage found in the Bible, where Eph. 5:22-24 makes the *man*, and not the *government* or the *woman*, the sovereign in the context of families. This is what happens whenever mankind rebels against God's authority by trying to improve on God's design for the family: massive injustice. Remember, that God created man *first*, and out of man's rib was created woman, which makes man the sovereign, and this conclusion is completely consistent with the concept of Natural Order we discussed earlier in section 7.2.

“For a man indeed ought not to cover his head, since he is made in the image and glory of God; but woman is the glory of man. For man is not from woman, but woman from man. Nor was man created for the woman, but woman for the man.”
[1 Cor. 11:7-9, Bible, NKJV]

If you are going to arrogantly call this attitude chauvinistic, politically incorrect, or bigoted then you're slapping God in the face and committing blasphemy because this is the way GOD designed the system and who are YOU to question that?

“But indeed, O man, who are you to reply against God? Will the thing formed say to him who formed it, ‘Why have you made me like this?’ Does not the potter have power over the clay, from the same lump to make one vessel for honor and another for dishonor?”
[Romans 9:20-21, Bible, NKJV]

If you would like to learn more about this subject, we refer you to our free *Sovereign Christian Marriage* book posted on our website at:

<http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Forms/Marriage/SovChristianMarriage.pdf>

The government uses this very same concept of privilege induced slavery in the “constructive contract” you in effect sign by becoming a “citizen” or availing yourself of a government benefit. Here is the phrase that one of our astute readers uses to describe it in his book *Social Security, Mark of the Beast*, which is posted on our website for your reading pleasure:

“Protection draws subjection.”
[Steven Miller]

In a sense, when you become a “citizen”, you “marry” the state in order to have its protection. Like marriage licenses, signing the “citizenship contract” means you give up some of your rights, and as a

matter of fact, the government wants you to believe that you give up the same rights by becoming a citizen as you do by getting a marriage license. When you marry the federal government by becoming a “U.S. citizen”, you in effect are assimilated into the federal corporation called the “United States” defined in 28 U.S.C. §3002(15)(A) and are classified by the courts as an officer of that corporation in receipt of taxable privileges. You also then become completely subject to the jurisdiction of that corporation. If you are a child of God, at the point when you married the state as a citizen, you united God with an idolatrous, mammon state and sold yourself into legal slavery voluntarily, in direct violation of the Bible:

*“No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.”
[Matt. 6:24, Bible]*

*“Do not be unequally yoked together with unbelievers. For what fellowship has righteousness with lawlessness? And what communion has light with darkness?”
[2 Cor. 6:14, Bible, NKJV]*

As expected, God’s law once again says that we should not become citizens of this world:

*“For our citizenship is in heaven, from which we also eagerly wait for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ”
[Philippians 3:20]*

*“These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off were assured of them, embraced them and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.”
[Hebrews 11:13]*

*“Beloved, I beg you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul...”
[1Peter 2:1]*

*“Do you not know that friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever therefore wants to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God.”
[James 4:4]*

One of the reasons God doesn’t want us to become citizens of this world is because when we do, we have violated the first commandment and committed idolatry, by replacing God with an artificial god called government, who then provides protection for us that we for one reason or another can’t or won’t trust or have faith in God to provide. This lack of faith then becomes our downfall. The words of the Apostle Paul resolve why this is:

*“But he who doubts is condemned if he eats, because he does not eat from faith; for whatever is not from faith [in God] is sin.”
[Rom. 14:23, Bible, NKJV]*

In a very real sense, the government has simply learned how to use propaganda to create fear and insecurity in the people, and then they invent vehicles to turn eliminating your fear into a profit center that requires you to become citizens and pay taxes to support. For instance, they use the Federal Reserve to create the Great Depression by contracting the money supply, and then they get these abused people worried and feeling insecure about retirement and security in the early 1930’s, and then invent a new program called Social(ist) Security to help eliminate their fear and restore your sense of security. But remember, in the process of procuring the “privilege” to be free of anxiety about old age,

you have surrendered sovereignty over your person and labor to the government, and they then have the moral authority to tax your wages and make you into a serf and a peon to pay off the federal debt accumulated to run that program.

Another favorite trick of governments is to make something illegal and then turn it into a “privilege” that is taxed. This is how governments maximize their revenues. They often call the tax a “license fee”, as if to imply that you never had the right to do that activity without a license. You will never hear a government official admit to it, but the government reasoning is that the tax amounts to a “bribe” or “tribute” to the government to get them to honor or respect some privilege and to enforce it in a court of law. They will even try to treat your rights this way! Here is what the courts have to say about this kind of despicable behavior by the government:

“A right common in every citizen such as the right to own property or to engage in business of a character not requiring regulation CANNOT, however, be taxed as a special franchise by first prohibiting its exercise and then permitting its enjoyment upon the payment of a certain sum of money.”

[Stevens v. State, 2 Ark. 291; 35 Am. Dec. 72, Spring Val. Water Works v. Barber, 99 Cal. 36, 33 Pac. 735, 21 L.R.A. 416. Note 57 L.R.A. 416]

Clear thinking about our freedom and liberty demands that when faced with situations like this, we ask ourselves, where does the government derive its authority and “privileges”(?)...from the PEOPLE! The Declaration of Independence says so:

We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights, that among these are life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness. That to secure these rights, governments are instituted among men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed.

Instead, we ought to charge government employees a tax for the “privilege” of having the authority and the “privilege” from the people to govern them, and the tax that government servants pay us for that privilege should be equal to whatever they charge us for the privileges they delegate back to us using the authority we gave them! We need to think clearly about this because it’s very easy to get trapped in bad logic by deceitful lawyers and politicians who want to get into your bank account and enslave you with their unjust laws and taxes. We should always remember who the public servants are and who the public is. We are the public and government employees are the servants! Start acting like the boss for once and tell the government what you expect out of them. The only reason the government continues to listen to us is because:

- We vote our officials into office.
- We can buy guns to protect ourselves from government abuse.
- If we don’t like the laws they pass, we can nullify them every time we sit down on a jury or a grand jury.

For instance, the government started issuing marriage licenses in about 1923 and charged people for the “privilege”. But then we have to ask ourselves what a license is. A license is permission from the state to perform an act which, without a license, would be illegal. Is it illegal to get married without the blessing of the state? Did Adam and Eve have a marriage license from God? Absolutely NOT. Marriage licenses, driver’s licenses, and professional licenses are a scam designed to increase control of the state over your life and turn you into a financial slave and serf to the government!

The IRS uses privilege-induced slavery to its advantage as well. For instance, it:

1. Sets the rate of withholding for a given income slightly higher than it needs to be so that Americans who paid tax will have to file to get their money back. In the process of filing, these unwitting citizens:
 - 1.1. Have to incriminate themselves on their tax returns.
 - 1.2. Forfeit most of the Constitutional rights, including the First (right to NOT communicate with your government), Fourth (seizure), and Fifth Amendment (self-incrimination) protections.
 - 1.3. Tell the IRS their employer, which later allows the IRS to serve the private employer illegally with a “Notice of Levy” and steal assets in violation of due process protections in the Constitution in the Fifth Amendment.
2. On the W-4 form, makes it a privilege just to hold onto your income. The regulations written by the Treasury illegally (and unconstitutionally) say that if a person does not submit a W-4 or submits an incorrect W-4, the employer (who really isn’t an “employer” because it isn’t a federal employer who has “employees” as defined in 26 CFR § 31.3401(c)) must withhold at the single zero rate. Thus, it becomes a “privilege” to just receive the money you earned *without* tax deducted! The only way you can preserve the “privilege” is to incriminate yourself by filling out the W-4, in violation of the Fifth Amendment.
3. The federal judiciary and the IRS will wickedly tell you that because of the Anti-Injunction Act found at 26 U.S.C. §7421, if you dispute the amount of tax you owe or you assert non-liability, you must pay the tax FIRST before you are permitted to file a lawsuit and subject your case to judicial review. In effect, what Congress has done by legislation is forced you to bribe the government in order to have the privilege to sue them! If you assert that you are a “nontaxpayer” and a person not liable for tax, the IRS will try to get your case dismissed because corrupt judges will assert “sovereign immunity”. See section 8.4.2 for further details on this scam. For those of you who are Christians, this scam quite clearly violates the bible, which declares:

*“And you shall take no bribe, for a bribe blinds the discerning and perverts the words of the righteous.”
[Exodus 23:8]*

4. Your state government will tell you that you MUST give them a valid Social Security Number in order for you to get a state driver’s license. They will do this in spite of the fact that traveling is a right and not a government privilege. In the words of the U.S. Supreme Court and lower courts:

*“The right to travel is part of the ‘liberty’ that a citizen cannot be deprived without due process of law.”
[Kent v. Dulles, [357 U.S. 116](#) (1958); U.S. v. Laub, [385 U.S. 475](#) (1967)]*

“The use of the highways for the purpose of travel and transportation is not a mere privilege, but a common and fundamental Right of which the public and the individual cannot be rightfully deprived.” -Chicago Motor Coach vs. Chicago, 169 NE 22; Ligare vs. Chicago, 28 NE 934; Boon vs. Clark, 214 SSW 607; 25 Am.Jur. (1st) Highways Sect.163.

To give you just one more example of how privilege-induced slavery leads to abuse, let’s look at licenses to practice law. The only rational basis for having any kind of professional license is consumer protection, but the legal profession has totally distorted and twisted this concept to benefit them, which amounts to a massive conflict of interest. For instance:

1. Only licensed attorneys can defend others in court. This prevents family members or friends or paralegals from providing low-cost legal assistance in court, and creates a greater marketplace and monopoly for legal services by attorneys. This also means that a lot more people go without legal representation, because they can’t afford to hire a lawyer to represent them. Is that justice, or is that simply the spread of oppression and injustice in the name of profit for the legal profession?
2. Even if the attorney is licensed to practice law from the socialist state, the court can revoke their right to defend anyone in a court of law. For instance:
 - 2.1. Look at what the court did to attorney Jeffrey Dickstein in *United States v. Collins*, 920 F.2d 619, (10th Cir. 11/27/1990), which we showed in section 6.6.4.5. If you look at the

ruling for this case, you will find that the court withdrew defendant Collins right to be represented by Attorney Dickstein, because they called attorney Dickstein a “vexatious litigant”. He was therefore deprived of his choice of competent legal counsel, because the court viewed his counsel as “politically incorrect”.

- 2.2. Refer also to what the court did to attorney Oscar Stilley in section 6.5.1, as he defended Dr. Phil Roberts on tax charges. The court said, and we quote:

“The practice of law, sir, is a privilege, especially in Federal Court. You’re close to losing that privilege in this court, Mr. Stilley.”

3. Clients with attorneys are given favoritism by the court in the award of attorney fees against the other side. This leads attorneys to inflate their fees if they expect sanctions, in order to coerce the opposing side to settle. In most courts, pro per or pro se litigants are either not allowed or seldom are awarded attorney fees against the opposing side. Only litigants who have counsel can get attorney fee awards by the court. In effect, the courts treat the time and expense of pro per litigants in defending themselves as irrelevant and completely without value! That’s right..if you as a pro per litigant keep track of your time diligently and bill for it at a rate less than an attorney in your motion for sanctions against the other side, the judge (who incidentally used to be a lawyer and probably still has lawyer golf buddies he wants to bring business to) will laugh you out of the courtroom! This has the effect of incentivizing people to have expensive legal counsel and incentivizes the lawyers to prolong the litigation and maximize their hourly rate to maximize their income. If you then ask a judge why they don’t award attorney fee sanctions to pro per litigants, he might get defensive and say: “*Pro per litigants are high maintenance, and make extra work for the court because they don’t know what they are doing.*” And yet these same courts and judges are the ones who earlier, as attorneys practicing law, intimidated and perpetuated the very ignorance on the part of their clients that made these people ignorant litigants as pro pers! All this rhetoric is just a smokescreen for the real agenda, which is maximizing business for and profits of those who practice law, and restricting the supply of qualified talent in order to keep the prices and the income of attorneys artificially high.

If we avail ourselves of a “privilege” granted by the state through operation of any statute that does not involve the exercise of a fundamental right, then we cannot have a constitutional grounds for redress of grievances against the statute:

“Anyone who partakes of the benefits or privileges of a given statute, or anyone who even places himself into a position where he may avail himself of those benefits at will, cannot reach constitutional grounds to redress grievances in the courts against the given statute.”

*[Ashwander v. T.V.A., 297 U.S. 288, 346, 56 S. Ct. 466, 482, 80 L.Ed. 688, (1938)]**[underlines added]*

But if we are simply trying to exist, by working and receiving a paycheck, voting, serving on jury duty, and fulfilling our various civic and family duties, we cannot be taxed for the mere privilege of existing:

*“The individual, unlike the corporation, cannot be taxed for the mere privilege of existing. The corporation is an artificial entity which owes its existence and charter power to the State, but the individual’s right to live and own property are natural rights for the enjoyment of which an excise cannot be imposed.” *Redfield v. Fisher*, 292 Oregon 814, 817*

“Legislature...cannot name something to be a taxable privilege unless it is first a privilege.” [Taxation West Key 43]...**“The Right to receive income or earnings is a right belonging to every person and realization and receipt of income is therefore not a ‘privilege’, that can be taxed.”**
[Taxation West Key 933]-**Jack Cole Co. v. MacFarland**, 337 S.E. 2d 453, Tenn.

7.4.7 **Civil Disobedience to Corrupt Governments is a Biblical Mandate**

“The reward of energy, enterprise and thrift is taxes.” -- William Feather

*“I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. **And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is the good and acceptable and perfect will of God.**”*
[Romans 12:1-2, Bible, NKJV]

There are several new testament verses that are quoted out of context by alleged government authorities and false churches in order to deceive people into believing that they should support their man-made governments and obey their man-made law. This, however, is not the case, as God has never given His people authority to make their own law or to walk in the statutes of men.

Therefore, a more detailed look is necessary regarding these scriptures so that the deception can clearly be seen. One verse that is relentlessly misquoted is “...render unto Caesar!” found in Mark 12:14-17, where Jesus said:

“Render unto Caesar the things that are Caesar's and unto God the things that are God's.”
[Mark 12:14-17, Bible, NKJV].

When Jesus said this, he was totally aware of God’s Law, and we can be sure that he was not telling the teachers of the law to do contrary to God’s Law. Let’s see just exactly what Jesus meant by “the things which are Caesar’s” when he said this.

First of all, who was this “Caesar” that Jesus was referring to, but the equivalent of a king? Let’s see who the king is in our society according to the supreme Court:

*“Sovereignty itself is, of course, not subject to law, for it is the author and source of law; but **in our system, while sovereign powers are delegated to the agencies of government, sovereignty itself remains with the people, by whom and for whom all government exists and acts.**”*
[Yick Wo v. Hopkins, [118 U.S. 356](#); 6 S.Ct. 1064 (1886)]

*“The people of this State, as the successors of its former sovereign, are entitled to all the rights which formerly belonged to the King by his prerogative. **Through the medium of their Legislature they may exercise all the powers which previous to the Revolution could have been exercised either by the King alone, or by him in conjunction with his Parliament; subject only to those restrictions which have been imposed by the Constitution of this State or of the U.S.**”*
[Lansing v. Smith, 21 D. 89., 4 Wendel 9 (1829) (New York)]

The real “king” in our society is *not* the government or anyone *serving* the sovereign people in the government, but the PEOPLE! That’s you! So even if you misinterpret Jesus’ words to mean that we should render to corrupt government “servants” that which it illegally asks for and demands, since your

own government calls you the king, then your public servants are the ones who should be “rendering”! Render to the king (Caesar, that’s you) his due, which is everything that is his property and his right, including 100% of his earned wage.

*“Remember the word that I said to you, ‘A servant is not greater than his master.’”
[Jesus in the Bible, John 15:20]*

Why does the IRS insist on arguing with the King and violating this scripture? Therefore, covetous public servants in the government, from a Biblical perspective, simply can’t be greater than the sovereigns they serve in the public at large or they are violating God’s law. Plain and simple, isn’t it?

The context for the “Render to Caesar” quote above was that the Pharisees wanted to trap Jesus. They were the teachers of the Law, and knew full well what God’s word says about laws and governments other than God’s. The Pharisees knew ALL of the following:

They knew that even their own Israelite kings could not make any law, but could only administer God’s law, not turning aside from God’s commandments, to the right hand, or to the left:

[Deut 17:14] [The word of the Lord through his servant Moses]: When thou [Israel] art come unto the land which the LORD thy God gives thee, and shalt possess it, and shalt dwell therein, and shalt say, I will set a king over me, like as all the nations that are about me;

[Deut 17:18] And it shall be, when he sitteth upon the throne of his kingdom, that he shall write him a copy of this law in a book out of that which is before the priests the Levites: [17:19] and it shall be with him, and he shall read therein all the days of his life: that he may learn to fear the LORD his God, to keep all the words of this law and these statutes, to do them: [17:20] That his heart be not lifted up above his brethren, and that he turn not aside from the commandment, to the right hand. Or to the left: to the end that he may prolong his days in his kingdom, he, and his children, in the midst of Israel.

Not adding to it, or diminishing from it:

[Deut 12:32] What thing soever I command you [all Israel], observe to do it: thou shalt not add thereto, nor diminish from it.

The Pharisees knew that it was a sin to walk in the statutes of the heathen, and that if their OWN ISRAELITE KINGS made any statutes, it was a SIN to walk in their statutes as well:

[2 Ki 17:6] In the ninth year of Hoshea the king of Assyria took Samaria, and carried Israel away into Assyria, and placed them in Halah and in Habor by the river of Gozan, and in the cities of the Medes. [17:7] for so it was, that the children of Israel had sinned against the LORD their God, which had brought them up out of the land of Egypt, from under the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt, and had feared other gods, [17:8] And walked in the statutes of the heathen, whom the LORD cast out from before the children of Israel, and of the kings of Israel, which they had made. [2Ki 17:18] Therefore the LORD was very angry with Israel, and removed them out of his sight: there was none left but the tribe of Judah only. [17:19] Also Judah kept not the commandments of the LORD their God, but walked in the statutes of Israel which they made.

The Pharisees knew that God’s people have laws that are different from all other people’s [God’s Laws] and that even in foreign lands they do not keep the king’s laws:

[Est 3:8] Then Haman [the highest prince in the kingdom of the Medes and the Persians] said to King Hauser's [the king of the Medes and the Persians who reigned from India to Ethiopia], "There is a certain people [The Jews; Judeans who were obedient to God's Law] scattered and dispersed among the people in all the provinces of your kingdom; their laws are different from all other people's, and they do not keep the king's laws. . ."

The Pharisees knew the principle that consenting with a thief, be he king or commoner, makes one a partaker with that thief –and an apostate:

[Ps 50:18] When thou sawest a thief then thou consentedst with him, and hast been partaker with adulterers.

Adulterers—Strong's reference number: 5003

Hebrew: na'aph

Definition: to commit adultery; fig. to apostatize

The Pharisees knew that those who participate in evil through the use of an agent are guilty of the act themselves:

[2 Sa 11:14] And it came to pass in the morning, that David wrote a letter to Joab [his agent], and sent it by the hand of Uriah. [11:15] And he wrote in the letter, saying, Set ye Uriah in the forefront of the hottest battle, and retire ye from him, that he may be smitten, and die. [11:16] And it came to pass, when Joab observed the city, that he assigned Uriah unto a place where he knew that valiant men were. [11:17] And the men of the city went out, and fought with Joab: and there fell some of the people of the servants of David; and Uriah the Hittite died also.

[2 Sa 11:26] And when the wife of Uriah heard that Uriah her husband was dead, she mourned for her husband. [11:27] And when the mourning was past, David sent and fetched her to his house, and she became his wife, and bare him a son. But the thing that David had done displeased the LORD.

[2 Sa 12:9] [Then Nathan said to David] Wherefore hast thou despised the commandment of the LORD, to do evil in his sight? thou hast killed Uriah the Hittite with the sword, [through the use of an agent] and hast taken his wife to be thy wife, and hast slain him with the sword of the children of Ammon.

Therefore, by the same principle, the Pharisees knew that participating in a heathen government by financing someone else [an agent] to enforce heathen laws makes the one who pays the tribute guilty of the acts of the heathen government.

The Pharisees knew that those who are obedient to God will not pay toll, tribute, and custom to a heathen king ["Caesar"]:

[Ezr 4:6] Now in the reign of Ahasuerus [a heathen king ("Caesar")], in the beginning of his reign, they [the king's people through their agents, the counselors] wrote an accusation [to the king] against the inhabitants of Judah and Jerusalem. [saying the following:][4:12] Let it be known to the king that the Jews [who obey God's law, not the king's law] who came up from you have come to us at Jerusalem, and are building the rebellious and evil city, [from the king's point of view only; righteous and obedient from God's point of view] and are finishing its walls and repairing the foundations. [4:13] Let it now be known to the king that, if this city is built and the walls completed, they will

not pay tax, tribute, or custom, and the king's treasury will be diminished. [They will pay no tribute to "Caesar"]. [NKJ]

[4:16] We certify the king that, if this city be builded again, and the walls thereof set up, by this means thou shalt have no portion [no tribute to "Caesar"] on this side the river. [KJV]

The Pharisees knew that the throne of iniquity cannot have fellowship with God:

[Ps 94:20] Shall the throne of iniquity [wicked rulers] have fellowship with thee, which frameth mischief by a law? [make enactments or decrees which condemn innocent blood by adding to or diminishing from God's Law]

The Pharisees knew that the people in whose heart is God's law are to obey His Law and are not to fear the reproach of men:

[Is 51:7] Hearken unto me [the Lord], ye that know righteousness, the people in whose heart is my law; fear ye not the reproach of men, neither be ye afraid of their revilings.

[Is 51:12] I, even I, am he that comforteth you: who art thou, that thou shouldest be afraid of a man that shall die, and of the son of man which shall be made as grass... "

The Pharisees knew God's admonition about doing after the manners of the heathen:

[Eze 11:10] Ye [Israel] shall fall by the sword; I [the Lord] will judge you in the border of Israel; and ye shall know that I am the LORD.

[Eze 11:12] And ye shall know that I am the LORD: for ye have not walked in my statutes, neither executed my judgments, but have done after the manners of the heathen that are round about you.

Note: The Hebrew word translated to "manners" speaks specifically of governmental and judicial activity. Here, Ezekiel is not speaking of "ways or customs" of the heathen, he is speaking about the "statutes, ordinances, judgments, laws and government" of the heathen.

Manners—Strong's reference number: 4941

Hebrew: mishpat

Derivation: Derived from 8199

Definition: prop. a verdict (favorable or unfavorable) pronounced judicially, espec. A sentence or formal decree (human or [partic.] divine law, individual or collect.) include. The act, the place, the suit, the crime, and the penalty; abstr. justice, include. right, or privilege (statutory or customary), or even a style

Manners—Strong's reference number: 8199

Hebrew: shaphat

Derivation: A primary word.

Definition: to judge, i.e., pronounce sentence (for or against); impl. vindicate or punish; by extens. To govern; pass. To litigate (lit. or fig.)

The Pharisees knew that God's people do not obey wicked governments that have other gods even if they are thrown into a fiery furnace:

[Dan 3:16] Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego replied to the king, "O Nebuchadnezzar, we do not need to defend ourselves before you in this matter. [3:17] If we are thrown into the blazing furnace, the God we serve is able to save us from it, and he will rescue us from your hand, O king.

[3:18] But even if he does not, we want you to know, O king, that we will not serve your gods or worship the image of gold you have set up." [NIV]

[3:19] Then Nebuchadnezzar was full of fury, and the expression on his face changed toward Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego. Therefore he spoke and commanded that they heat the furnace seven times more than it was usually heated. [3:20] And he commanded certain mighty men of valor who were in his army to bind Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego, and cast them into the burning fiery furnace. [NKJ]

The Pharisees knew that God's people do not obey wicked governments even if they are thrown into a lion's den:

[Dan 6:7] All the presidents of the kingdom, the governors, and the princes, the counselors, and the captains, have consulted together to establish a royal statute, and to make a firm decree, that whosoever shall ask a petition of any god or man for thirty days, save of thee, O king, he shall be cast into the den of lions. [Dan 6:10] Now when Daniel knew that the writing was signed, he went into his house; and his windows being open in his chamber toward Jerusalem, he kneeled upon his knees three times a day, and prayed, and gave thanks before his God, as he did aforetime.

[Dan 6:16] Then the king commanded, and they brought Daniel, and cast him into the den of lions. . ."

The Pharisees knew that those who have set up kings and princes [governments] but not by God's hand, have trespassed against His law:

[Hos 4:1] [The word of the LORD through the prophet Hosea]: Hear the word of the LORD, ye children of Israel: for the LORD hath a controversy with the inhabitants of the land, because there is no truth, nor mercy, nor knowledge of God in the land.

[Hos 8:1] Set the trumpet to thy mouth. He [the enemy] shall come as an eagle against the house of the LORD, because they [Israel] have transgressed my covenant, and trespassed against my law.

[Hos 8:4] They have set up kings, but not by me: they have made princes, and I [the Lord] knew it not: of their silver and their gold have they made them idols, that they may be cut off.

The Pharisees knew that it is a sin to keep statutes made by Israelite kings, let alone a heathen "Caesar":

[Mic 6:13] [The warning of the Lord through his servant Micah]: Therefore also will I [the Lord] make thee [Israel] sick in smiting thee, in making thee desolate because of your sins.

[Mic 6:16] For the statutes of Omri are kept, and all the works of the house of Ahab [kings of Israel who made their own statutes], and ye walk in their counsels; that I should

make thee a desolation, and the inhabitants thereof an hissing: therefore ye shall bear the reproach of my people.

The Pharisees were fully aware that God only allowed “Caesar” to be in power to prove Israel to see whether they would keep the way of the LORD to walk therein, as their fathers did keep it, or not:

[Jdg 2:21] I [the Lord] also will not henceforth drive out any from before them [Israel] of the nations [heathen Caesars, etc.] which Joshua left [unvanquished] when he died: [2:22] That through them [the heathen governments] I may prove Israel, whether they will keep the way of the LORD to walk therein, as their fathers did keep it, or not.

[Jdg 3:4] and they [the nations which the LORD left] were to prove Israel by them, to know whether they [Israel] would hearken unto the commandments of the LORD, which he commanded their fathers by the hand of Moses.

And the Pharisees were aware of the conclusion of the whole matter:

[Ecc 12:13] Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep his commandments: for this is the whole duty of man.

And finally, the Pharisees knew that when a people, and especially believers, refuse to correct or rebuke sin in their society, then the unrebuked sin of even one evil man could curse the whole society and separate that society from the blessings of the Lord. In the Pharisees time, the evil was that of the King named Caesar, which they could not and would not rebuke and thus became hypocrites, as Jesus called them.

[Matt. 23:23, Bible] “Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you pay tithes of mint and anise and cummin, and have neglected the weightier matters of the law: justice and mercy and faith. These you ought to have done, without leaving the others undone.”

The Pharisees knew their hypocrisy in the matter of rebuking sin at the time they asked the question of Jesus about rendering taxes to Caesar because the Book of Joshua, Chapter 7, written 1400 years earlier, tells the story about Moses’ successor Joshua, who lost a war with the Amorites and the blessings of God because one of his men illegally stole a treasure that was the spoils of war and hid it under his tent and would not confess or right his wrong before God and his people, and preferred to lie about it. The result was that the people felt guilty and cowardly in battle and ran away from the enemy to become the laughing stock of the land. They were cursed by God because they would not confront and correct this evil in their society, which consisted of theft and deceit:

[Joshua 7:11-13] “Israel has sinned, and they have also transgressed My covenant which I commanded them. For they have even taken some of the accursed things, and have both stolen and deceived [the IRS]; and they have also put it among their own stuff.

“Therefore, the children of Israel could not stand before their enemies, but turned their backs before their enemies, because they have become doomed to destruction. Neither will I be with you anymore, unless you destroy the accursed [the IRS and the Federal Reserve in our day and age] from among you.”

Get up, sanctify the people [clean up this mess!], and say ‘Sanctify yourselves for tomorrow, because thus says the Lord God of Israel; “There is an accursed thing in your midst, O Israel; you cannot stand before your enemies until you take away the accursed thing from among you.”’

Therefore, knowing all of the above scriptures, the Pharisees laid a trap for Jesus similar to the question: “Have you stopped beating your wife yet?” They were certain that they could trap Jesus into affirming that either: it was lawful to pay tribute to “Caesar”, which they knew to be against God’s Law, and thereby condemning him under God’s Law to pay tribute to a heathen government [Caesar], thereby condemning him under “Caesar’s” “law”. Then the Pharisees could go tell “Caesar”, and thereby get rid of Jesus with the sword of Caesar:

[Mat 22:17] [The Pharisees sent their disciples to Jesus, who said,] Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute unto Caesar, or not?

Jesus was also versed in the above scriptures. He was fully aware that it is against God’s Law to give tribute to a heathen “Caesar”. He also knew that it would enrage “Caesar” for him to say so. Jesus knew that giving the correct answer was a trap laid for him by the Pharisees, and he evaded their trap by the following: He didn’t define what was or was not “Caesar’s”. He didn’t even affirm that the penny with “Caesar’s” image and superscription was to be rendered to “Caesar”. Jesus’ answer was that the Pharisees should render to “Caesar”, a heathen who did not know or obey God’s Law, exactly what was due to any heathen or Israelite who did not obey God’s Law:

[Num 15:15] One ordinance shall be both for you of the congregation [of Israel], and also for the stranger [foreigner; non Israelite] that sojourneth with you, an ordinance for ever in your generations: as ye are, so shall the stranger be before the LORD. [15:16] One law and one manner shall be for you, and for the stranger that sojourneth with you. (i.e.: death for breaking God’s Law:

[Deu 27:26] Cursed be he that confirmeth not all the words of this law [God’s Law, not Caesar’s law] to do them. And all the people shall say, Amen.)

Therefore, the Pharisees knew that what they had just been told was to render unto “Caesar” what God’s Law required: death, and since they were declining to carry out the sentence of the law, they were hypocrites, since they were the enforcement officials of God’s Law and knew what “Caesar” was due under God’s Law. They had also been told that they were doing presumptuously by not hearkening to carry out the sentence of the law and they themselves should be put to death along with “Caesar” in order to put their own evil away from Israel:

[Deu 17:11] According to the sentence of the law which they shall teach thee, and according to the judgment which they shall tell thee, thou shalt do: thou shalt not decline from the sentence which they shall shew thee, to the right hand, nor to the left. [17:12] And the man that will do presumptuously, and will not hearken unto the priest that standeth to minister there before the LORD thy God, or unto the judge, [and render unto Caesar what Caesar was due, death in this particular case] even that man shall die [the Pharisees, for not carrying out the sentence in this particular case]: and thou shalt put away the evil from Israel.

This is obviously why the Pharisees marveled at him. They were not about to tell “Caesar” that God’s Law required him to be put to death, because “Caesar” would have then come after the Pharisees. In addition, Jesus had just rebuked both “Caesar” and the Pharisees by stating publicly that both “Caesar” and the Pharisees should be put to death, and the Pharisees who hated Jesus knew it but couldn’t go tell “Caesar” in order to get Jesus in trouble. Also, “Caesar” and his agents didn’t know enough about God’s Law to realize that Jesus said that “Caesar” should be put to death, and “Caesar” thinks to this very day that Jesus was saying to pay tribute. Checkmate. Jesus will, incidentally, render to “Caesar” what is “Caesar’s” at His coming:

[Luk 19:27] [Jesus, speaking of himself in a parable said,] but those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them [kings, “Caesars”, judges of the earth and their followers at His coming], bring hither, and slay them before me.

[Psalm 2:7] [The psalmist foretelling that Jesus will “render unto Caesar what is Caesar’s at his coming]: I will declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto me, Thou art my Son [Jesus]; this day have I begotten thee.

[2:9] Thou [Jesus] shalt break them [the heathen kings (Caesars) and judges] with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter’s vessel. [2:10] Be wise now therefore, O ye kings: [“Caesars”] be instructed, ye judges of the earth. [Note: These verses in Psalm 2 are confirmed to be about Jesus in Acts 13:33; Heb 1:1-5; Heb 5:5, and by Jesus Himself in Rev 2:26-27].

[Zec 14:9] [Zechariah prophesying that Jesus will “render unto Caesar what is Caesar’s” at His coming]: And the LORD [Jesus] shall be king over all the earth: in that day shall there be one LORD, and his name one.

[14:12] And this shall be the plague wherewith the LORD [Jesus] will smite all the people [kings, “Caesars”, judges of the earth and all who follow them] that have fought against Jerusalem [Jesus’ capital city when He comes with his saints]; Their flesh shall consume away while they stand upon their feet, and their eyes shall consume away in their holes, and their tongue shall consume away in their mouth. [Note: These verses can be seen to be about Jesus in Mat 25:31-32; Mat 28:18; Joh 18:37; 1Ti 6:13-15; Rev 11:15; Rev 19:14; Rev 20:4-6].

Continuing with Jesus’ answer to the Pharisees:

[Mat 22:18] But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites? [22:19] Shew me the tribute money. And they brought unto him a penny. [22:20] And he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription? [22:21] They say unto him, Caesar’s. Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto Caesar the things which are Caesar’s, and unto God the things that are God’s.

[Mar 12:14] And when they [certain of the Pharisees and of the Herodians] were come, they say unto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawful to give tribute to Caesar, or not? [12:15] Shall we give, or shall we not give? But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? Bring me a penny, that I may see it. [12:16] and they brought it. And he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription? And they said unto him, Caesar’s [12:17] and Jesus answering said unto them, Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar’s and to God the things that are God’s. And they marveled at him.

[Luke 20:22] [The chief priests and scribes asked Jesus,] Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Caesar, or no? [20:23] but he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them, Why tempt ye me? [20:24] shew me a penny. Whose image and superscription hath it? They answered and said, Caesar’s. [20:25] and he said unto them, Render therefore unto Caesar the things which be Caesar’s, and to God the things that are God’s.

From that day forward, the Pharisees and the Sadducees would not ask Jesus any further questions:

[Mat 22:46] And no one was able to answer Him a word, nor from that day on did anyone dare question Him anymore. [NKJ]

[Luk 20:39] Then some of the scribes answered and said, "Teacher, You have spoken well." [20:40] but after that they dared not question Him anymore. [NKJ]

Jesus was not calling for revolution against Rome, even though it was an oppressive conqueror of Israel. On the other hand, his apostles refused to obey a government order not to preach and teach in Jesus' name (Acts 5:27-29). On that occasion, one of Jesus' apostles said:

"We ought to obey God rather than men."

The same admonition to obey God rather than man is found in Psalm 118:8-9

*"It is better to trust the Lord
Than to put confidence in man.
It is better to trust in the Lord
Than to put confidence in princes."
[Psalm 118:8-9, Bible, NKJV]*

Finally, the Apostle Paul agreed with and reiterated these conclusions by saying that that it is scandalous for Christians to use civil rather than ecclesiastical courts in order to settle our disputes:

1Corinthians 6:1 Dare any of you, having a matter against another, go to law before the unjust, and not before the saints?

*1Corinthians 6:7 Now therefore **there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law [in a civil rather than ecclesiastical court] one with another.** Why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather [suffer yourselves to] be defrauded?*

The Roman Tribute Coin

5. Tiberius; 14 - 37 A.D.; AR denarius; the "Tribute Penny" of the Bible. In Mark 12:14-17 the Temple priests, testing Jesus, asked Him:

And when they were come, they say unto him, "Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawful to give tribute to Caesar, or not? Shall we give, or shall we not give?"

But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said unto them, "Why tempt ye me? bring me a penny (denarius), that I may see [it]."

And they brought [it]. And he saith unto them, "Whose [is] this image and superscription?" And they said unto him, "Caesar's."

And Jesus answering said unto them, "Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's." And they marveled at him.

Obv: Laureate head of Tiberius, r. Rev: Livia, as Pax, seated on the reverse.

The account of the Tribute to Caesar is more extensively covered in Matthew, chapter 22. In this account, and others, the bible clearly shows that as soon as the Herodians understood the answer that they received, they marveled at the answer, and went on their way. After that time, they ceased to question Him any more.

When you research out the origin and lineage of the term “Pontifus Maximus”, you find the Babylonian origin. Essentially, it is saying that “Caesar is God.” This title was later adopted by the Roman Popes.

Conclusions

Aren't we supposed to obey the authority over us? Yes, as long as there is no conflict with God's law. Blind obedience to all civil authority dictates, wishes, whims etc. is not always necessary though. Furthermore, if blind obedience to civil authority is really the rule to live by, I have some thought provoking questions for those who preach that false doctrine to answer:

1. Was it right for Moses parents to disobey the civil authority over them and not kill their baby? The Hebrew midwives disobeyed the civil authority and God blessed them. See Ex. 1.
2. Was it right for Peter and the disciples to disobey civil authority and keep preaching Christ? See Acts 5.
3. Was it right for Samson to disobey the civil authority (the Philistines ruled the land)? See Judges 16.
4. Was it right for the prophets to disobey the civil authority and proclaim their message at the risk of life, limb and property? See Hebrews 11.
5. Was it right for Daniel to disobey the civil authority and pray to God in spite of the command by the absolute dictator not to do so? See Daniel 6.
6. Was it right for the founding fathers like Patrick Henry, George Washington, etc. to disobey King George, the civil authority over them, and begin this great land we now freely enjoy? I suggest you re-read the Declaration of independence and try to see the motive of those great and godly men.
7. If tyranny is not the government ordained by God, is it right to resist tyranny? See the entire history of the nation of Israel in their struggle against various tyrants.
8. Was it right for the Germans at the concentration camps to obey their elected or appointed civil authority and kill the Jews?

9. Have the IRS's chains of slavery become comfortable to you and you prefer them and the peace and safety of not standing for what is right over liberty? See Patrick Henry's famous speech. It applies very well here.
10. Was it right for the French underground to disobey the civil authority and blow up German tanks, bridges etc during WW II?
11. Was it right for the men in the book of Judges to disobey the civil authority over them and rebel against their rulers?
12. Was it right for the united States to oppose the aggression of Hitler? Sadam Hussein? Japan at Pearl Harbor? Etc.
13. If someone steals your car, kidnaps your kids or rapes your wife will you call the police (use the civil authorities and legal system) and/or defend your family physically and legally?
14. If the pacifist position is what some are now preaching, should Bible colleges and churches expel students and church members who go into the military or refuse entrance or membership to those who are in or have been in the military in order to be consistent?
15. Was it right for Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego to disobey the civil authority by not bowing on command? See Daniel 3.
16. In Acts 5 and 12 Peter disobeyed the civil authorities over him. He walked past the sleeping guards, out of jail and fled the country. This was illegal for him to do. Is this the same Peter who wrote the I Peter passage we preach from about obeying authority?

When one understands that the answer Jesus gave to whether we should pay taxes was given under Hebrew law, then they understand that the same fate awaits all who pay the tribute to Caesar that God will mete out for Caesar, then we can see that Jesus was clearly saying, "Do not pay taxes unto Caesar", as was alleged at His trial. See Luke 23:2, where the people accused Jesus of forbidding the payment of taxes to Caesar, which said:

[Luke 23:2, KJV] And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this [fellow] perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Caesar, saying that he himself is Christ a King.

See also: First Samuel 8:7-19 in which we learn God's displeasure with those who refused to be governed by Him and instead decided to elect their own King [government], who God said would oppress them.

And the Lord said to Samuel, "Heed the voice of the people in all that they say to you; for they have not rejected you, but they have rejected Me, that I should not reign over them.

"According to all the works which they have done since the day that I brought them up out of Egypt, even to this day—with which they have forsaken Me and served other gods—so they are doing to you also.

*"Now therefore heed their voice, **However, you shall solemnly forewarn them, and show them the behavior of the king who will reign over them.**"*

So Samuel told all the words of the Lord to the people who asked him for a king. And he said, "This will be the behavior of the king who will reign over you: He will take your sons and appoint them for his own chariots and to be his horsemen, and some will run before his chariots.

"He will appoint captains over his thousands and captains over his fifties, will set some to plow his ground and reap his harvest, and some to make his weapons of war and equipment for his chariots.

"He will take your daughters to be perfumers, cooks, and bakers.

"And he will take the best of your fields, your vineyards, and your olive groves, and give them to his servants.

“He will take a tenth of your grain and your vintage, and give it to his officers and servants.

“And he will take your male servants, your female servants, your finest young men, and your donkeys, and put them to his work.

*“He will take a tenth of your sheep. **And you will be his servants.***

“And you will cry out in that day because your king whom you have chosen for yourselves, and the Lord will not hear you in that day.”

Nevertheless the people refused to obey the voice of Samuel; and they said, “No, but we will have a king over us, that we also may be like all the nations and that our king may judge us and go out before us and fight our battles.”

What God was saying is that we should not appoint our government to rule over us, but to have them servicing us and for God to rule over us as the sovereigns in charge of the government.

*“Away with you, Satan! For it is written, ‘You shall worship the Lord your God, and Him **ONLY** [NOT the government!] you shall serve.’”*
[Matt. 4:10]

He was saying this because he knew that tyranny and a dictatorship would be the ultimate result, which would be oppressive and sinful.

*“You know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and those who are great exercise authority over them. **Yet it shall not be so among you; but whoever desires to become great among you, let him be your servant. And whoever desires to be first among you, let him be your slave**---just as the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give His life a ransom for many.”*
[Matthew 20:25-28, Bible, NKJV]

Is our present government our servant? Does the Internal Revenue **SERVICE** serve you? Our founding fathers ensured that the U.S. government started out in 1776 as our servant by limiting its power with a masterful system of checks and balances. They did this because the abuses and tyranny of the British king were fresh in their minds. But since then, we have forgotten what God told us and looked the other way while our Congress [who has unlawfully made itself into the the equivalent of the king in biblical times] and its henchmen in the IRS [the king's tax collectors] have transformed themselves from servants to tyrannical dictators by slowly but systematically rewriting the laws because the apathetic populace they created using the public education system let them get away with it. Revelation 18:3-8 describes what the reward is to be for those who seek to be part of such a corrupt government or those who trust in and do not rebel against such a government: God is talking below about Babylon, which is a metaphor for all the graft and corruption that results from human government unrestricted by the checks and balances that our founding fathers put into the U.S. Constitution and unaccountable to God. Earlier in Revelation 17, Babylon the Great is described as “The Great Harlot who sits on many waters with whom the kings of the earth committed fornication” (Rev. 17:1-2). We believe that this great Harlot is really the bride of Christ (his church/people) described by Paul in Eph. 5:22-24 which never married her husband, Christ, and therefore becomes a harlot and commits fornication with Satan. Here’s Rev. 18:3-8:

“For all the nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth have become rich through the abundance of her luxury.”

And I heard another voice from heaven saying, “Come out of her, my people, lest you share in her sins, and lest you receive of her plagues.

“For her sins have reached to heaven, and God has remembered her iniquities.

“Render to her just as she rendered to you, and repay her double according to her works; in the cup which she has mixed, mix double for her.

“In the measure that she glorified herself and lived luxuriously, in the same measure give her torment and sorrow; for she says in her heart, ‘I sit as queen, and am no widow, and will not see sorrow.’

“Therefore her plagues will come in one day—death and mourning and famine. And she will be utterly burned with fire, for strong is the Lord God who judges her.”

Look above again at what is REALLY supposed to be “rendered to Caesar [Babylon]” in Revelation 18:6-8:

“Render to her just as she rendered to you, and repay her double according to her works; in the cup which she has mixed, mix double for her.

“In the measure that she glorified herself and lived luxuriously, in the same measure give her torment and sorrow; for she says in her heart, ‘I sit as queen, and am no widow, and will not see sorrow.’

“Therefore her plagues will come in one day—death and mourning and famine. And she will be utterly burned with fire, for strong is the Lord God who judges her.”

So the reward for trusting government to rule us or allowing a king to rule over us instead of God is death and famine.

“For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.”

[Romans 6:23, NKVJ]

Why is this the reward to be rendered to Caesar? Because the idolatry represented by making Caesar into a false god violates the first and most important commandment!:

You shall have no other gods before Me. You shall not make for yourself a carved image—any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth; you shall not bow down or serve them. For I, the Lord your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children to the third and fourth generations of those who hate Me, but showing mercy to thousands, to those who love Me and keep My commandments.

[Exodus 20:3-6, NKVJ]

The Bible is replete with examples of those who were killed at the command or with the blessing of God for the idolatry of worshipping other gods, including government. Below are just a few examples:

Ezekiel 9:5 *“And I heard God say to the other men, ‘Follow him through the city and kill. Spare no one.’”*

Ezekiel 9:6 *“Kill the old men, young men, young women, mothers and children.”*

Ezekiel 9:7 "God said to them, 'Defile the Temple. Fill its courtyards with corpses. Get to work!' So they began to kill the people in the city."

Ezekiel 9:11 "Then the man wearing linen clothes returned and reported to the Lord, 'I have carried out your orders.'"

CONTEXT FOR WHY GOD COMMANDED THE KILLING IN THE ABOVE FOUR VERSES:

*Ezekiel 8:17: "Have you seen this, O son of man? Is it a trivial thing to the house of Judah to commit the **abominations** which they commit here? For **they have filled the land with violence**; then they have returned to provoke Me to anger. Indeed they put the branch to their nose. Therefore I also will act in fury. My eye will not spare nor will I have pity: and though they cry in My ears with a loud voice, I will not hear them."*

The people were:

- Committing acts of violence (Ezekiel 8:17)
- Worshipping idols (Eze. 8:10-12)
- Women were weeping for an idol called Tammuz (Ezekiel 8:14)
- Priests were worshipping the sun God. (Ezekiel 8:16)

The killing was God's judgment and wrath *against His own people*, not those of other races in a Zionist plot. God disciplined his own children in this case for violating the greatest and the first of the ten commandments found in Exodus 20:3-11.

God simply fulfilled justice by punishing his own people for violating the first commandment and committing idolatry. If he hadn't done this, He would not have maintained the sanctity of His children at the time (His family now includes everyone, not just Israel) or allowed the truth of His word, recorded in their writings, to be passed down through the generations so we could enjoy it today. The greater good was thereby accomplished, because God through the Israelites allowed His word and His truth to be revealed to us in what later became the Bible. No other culture or race has been able, through so many generations, to record the history and divine intervention of God in the lives of men better or in a more inspiring way than the writings of the Jews about God, and God apparently wanted to protect this, or His message of truth to us, and His love letter to the world, the Holy Bible, would be lost forever if he allowed His messenger, the Israelites, to be corrupted and to renounce their heritage and their history and the writings of the Bible they authored.

"As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten. Therefore be zealous and repent."
Rev. 3:19

The only thing the Bible says is to be rendered to Caesar is death and mourning and famine. Render to him his due! Now do you understand what Jesus was saying and why both the Government and the Pharisees wanted to crucify Him? We aren't suggesting here that you should take the law into your own hands and subvert the sovereignty of God through vigilante justice in fulfilling Jesus' command above, but we are showing you what Caesar really deserves and what only God in His righteousness can give him. Note that Jesus also took the trouble here to hide or encrypt

His subtle message, so that it would survive the ages and time and appear in the version of the Bible we have today. Otherwise, the government would have destroyed the Bible message long ago.

*Luke 10:21, "In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, **I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent** [of the world], and hast revealed them unto babes: even so, Father; for so it seemed good in thy sight."*

The Bible is radical and revolutionary when the Holy Spirit illuminates for us what God is really saying. Is it any wonder our Christian founding fathers rebelled against Britain so they could restore God to His rightful role over them? Those who truly believe that we should "render unto Caesar that which is Caesar's" can't in good conscience support the notion of the American Revolution, which at the time accomplished the opposite goal and was an armed rebellion against "Caesar".

7.4.8 Code of Ethics for Government Service

Below is the Code of Ethics for Government Employees. This is the moral and ethical standard by which the performance of all federal government employees is measured. We ask you to consider this carefully as you read through the following chapters and learn what the "government servants" in the U.S. Congress and the IRS have been doing to your constitutional rights and the fraudulent and illegal taking of your property with federal income taxes.

Code of Ethics for Government Employees

Public Law 96-303.

Passed June 27, 1980 unanimously by Congress.

Signed into law July 3, 1980 by President.

- I. Put loyalty to the the highest moral principles and to country above loyalty to persons, party, or Government department.***
- II. Uphold the Constitution, laws, and regulations of the United States and of all governments therein and never be a party to their evasion.***
- III. Give a full day's labor for a full day's pay; giving earnest effort and best thought to the performance of duties.***
- IV. Seek to find and employ more efficient and economical ways of getting tasks done.***
- V. Never discriminate unfairly by the dispensing of special favors or privileges to anyone, whether for remuneration or not; and never accept, for himself or herself or for family members, favors or benefits under circumstances which might be construed by reasonable persons as influencing the performance of governmental duties.***
- VI. Make no private promises of any kind binding upon the duties of office, since a Government employee has no private word which can be binding on public duty.***

VII. Engage in no business with the Government, either directly or indirectly, which is inconsistent with the conscientious performance of governmental duties.

VIII. Never use any information gained confidentially in the performance of governmental duties as a means of making private profit.

IX. Expose corruption wherever discovered.

X. Uphold these principles, ever conscious that public office is a public trust.

7.5 Role of Law

Law is defined as follows:

"The legislative pronouncement of the rules which should guide one's actions in society. The aggregate of those rules and principles of conduct promulgated by the legislative authority [court decisions], or established local customs. Our laws are derived from a combination of divine or moral laws, the laws of nature, and human experience, as has been evolved by human intellect influenced by the virtues of the ages. Human laws must therefore of necessity continually change s human experience shall prove the necessity of new laws to meet new evils, or evils which have taken upon themselves new forms, or as the public conscience shall change, thus viewing matters from different moral viewpoint."⁹¹

Frederick Bastiat, further helps us define and understand the purpose of law.

*We must remember that law is force, and that, consequently, the proper functions of the law cannot lawfully extend beyond the proper functions of force. When law and force keep a person within the bounds of justice, they impose nothing but a mere negation. **They oblige him only to abstain from harming others. They violate neither his personality, his liberty nor his property. They safeguard all of these. They are defensive; they defend equally the rights of all.**⁹²*

So we can see that law is force and that it must apply equally to all if liberty is to be protected. If it applies unequally to one class of persons over another, then it turns from being an instrument of liberty to an instrument of oppression and tyranny.

Many people think the purpose of law is to promote justice. According to Bastiat, *the purpose of law is to prevent injustice*. Law is a negative concept and not a positive concept. Law is there to prevent harm, not to encourage or mandate good. Here is another excerpt from his book, *The Law*, that explains this assertion:

Law Is a Negative Concept

The harmlessness of the mission performed by law and lawful defense is self-evident; the usefulness is obvious; and the legitimacy cannot be disputed.

⁹¹ Barron's Law Dictionary, Steven H. Gifis, ISBN 0-8120-3096-6, Barron's Educational Series, Inc., 1996, p. 283.

⁹² Frederick Bastiat, *The Law*, 1850.

As a friend of mine once remarked, this negative concept of law is so true that the statement, the purpose of the law is to cause justice to reign, is not a rigorously accurate statement. It ought to be stated that **the purpose of the law is to prevent injustice from reigning**. In fact, it is injustice, instead of justice, that has an existence of its own. Justice is achieved only when injustice is absent.

But when the law, by means of its necessary agent, force, imposes upon men a regulation of labor, a method or a subject of education, a religious faith or creed - then the law is no longer negative; it acts positively upon people. It substitutes the will of the legislator for their own initiatives. When this happens, the people no longer need to discuss, to compare, to plan ahead; the law does all this for them. Intelligence becomes a useless prop for the people; they cease to be men; they lose their personality, their liberty, their property.

Try to imagine a regulation of labor imposed by force that is not a violation of liberty; a transfer of wealth imposed by force that is not a violation of property. If you cannot reconcile these contradictions, then you must conclude that the law cannot organize labor and industry without organizing injustice.

The purpose of the law cannot be to promote charity, because charity and force are incompatible. Here is Bastiat's perspective from The Law again:

The Law and Charity

You say: "There are persons who have no money," and you turn to the law. but the law is not a breast that fills itself with milk. Nor are the lacteal veins of the law supplied with milk from a source outside the society. Nothing can enter the public treasury for the benefit of one citizen or one class unless other citizens and other classes have been forced to send it in. **If every person draws from the treasury the amount that he has put in it, it is true that the law then plunders nobody. But this procedure does nothing for the persons who have no money. It does not promote equality of income. The law can be an instrument of equalization only as it takes from some persons and gives to other persons. When the law does this, it is an instrument of plunder.**

Another word for plunder is *theft*. Whenever the government or the people use the law as an instrument of plunder/theft, and the government as a Robinhood, then the purpose of government turns from preventing injustice to:

- Punishing success by making people who work harder and earn more pay a higher percentage of their income in taxes. This discourages a proper work ethic.
- Plundering the rich to give to those who have the most votes. This causes democracies to devolve into "mobocracies" eventually, as low income persons vote for persons who will rob the rich and give them something for nothing. (We already have this, in that older people vote consistently for politicians who will expand and protect their social security benefits, which aren't a trust fund at all, but instead are a Pozzi scheme paid for by younger workers, moving money from hand-to-mouth)."
- An agent of organized extortion and lawlessness.
- A destabilizing force in society that undermines public trust and encourages political apathy (voter participation is the lowest it has been in years..ever wonder why).

Here is what the Supreme Court had to say about this type of plunder:

"To lay with one hand the power of the government on the property of the citizen, and with the other bestow it on favored individuals...is nonetheless robbery because it is done under the form of law and is called taxation." *Loan Association v. Topeka*, 20 Wall. 655, (1874)

The U.S. Supreme Court in the landmark case of *Pollock v. Farmers Loan and Trust*, 157 U.S. 429 (1895) said the following regarding what happens when the government becomes a robinhood and tries to promote equality of result rather than equality of opportunity. We end up with class warfare in society done using the force of law and a mobocracy mentality:

"The present assault upon capital is but the beginning. It will be but the stepping stone to others larger and more sweeping, until our political contest will become war of the poor against the rich; a war of growing intensity and bitterness.

...

The legislation, in the discrimination it makes, is class legislation. Whenever a distinction is made in the burdens a law imposes or in the benefits it confers on any citizens by reason of their birth, or wealth, or religion, it is class legislation, and leads inevitably to oppression and abuses, and to general unrest and disturbance in society."

Law therefore has a very important role in our society and is usually there to serve the common good, rather than "special interests." Oftentimes, the value or merit of a given law can be judged by how many people benefit from it. The fewer people within society who benefit, the more likely it is to be an unethical law, because it cannot, in a very limited application to a small subset of the population, benefit the "common good." Likewise, the more abstruse and confusing the law is written, the less understandable it will be, and it's difficult to obey a law one doesn't understand.

The Bible says we should obey the law:

"Therefore submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake, whether to the king as supreme, or to governors, as to those who are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers and for the praise of those who do good.

For this is the will of God, that by doing good you may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men--as free, yet not using liberty as a cloak for vice, but as bondservants of God.

*Honor all people. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honor the king."
[1 Peter 2:13-17]*

Laws are the foundation of most governments and of all stable government. Clearly, governments of men rather than laws have demonstrated themselves throughout the ages to be highly unstable and prone to moral decay, because "*The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?*" (Jeremiah 17:9). Below are some of the main purposes of written laws:

1. They create an inertia within the government that prevents the capriciousness of rulers who will not be long in office from abusing their power to oppress the rights of people.
2. Laws promote righteousness and justice in all societal dealings.
3. They define and circumscribe the extent of authority that elected leaders have, so that they do not overstep their bounds and abuse the public at large.
4. When laws promote a balance of power (like the Executive, Judicial, and Legislative branches of our government), they restrain government power and prevent tyranny.
5. Laws ensure order and prevent chaos in societies. They promote societal norms that are stable and predictable, which helps people feel safer and more secure. They promote a legal process for dealing with criminal and civil issues that ensures justice, righteous judgment, and consistency.

They prevent vigilanteism, which can quickly degenerate into anarchy. This builds public faith and confidence in the judicial system.

6. Laws prevent discrimination and favoritism and promote fairness, equity, and equality of everyone in society. This helps prevent members of society from feeling persecuted. Laws give members of society confidence to invest their time and energy into honoring their fellow men and being a productive member of society.

For all the above reasons, a government of laws and not of men in which people respect and obey the law is at the core of our society and our social fabric. Without law, there would be pure chaos, and we believe that the more people we have on the planet, the more chaos there would be without laws because the more crowded it would be and the more impact we would therefore unavoidably have on each other.

7.6 Role of Politicians and Rulers

We already discussed this subject previously in section 6.1: Role of bosses. Replace the word boss with "politician" or "ruler" in that section for an idea of what God expects of rulers.

In addition to things already mentioned about rulers, rulers and politicians, above all, have a duty and obligation to respect and honor the law, because our elected leaders are the ones who set the example that we follow. If they don't respect the law, then there is no reason for citizens to respect it either.

An interesting article about our representatives in Washington, DC was published recently by the Libertarian Party which betrays the fact that politicians are more corrupt than the people they govern, which is why we should always be vigilant in limiting the power of our elected officials:

Congressional Criminals

From the The Libertarian Party -- Sep 3, 1999

- From wife-beaters to drunk drivers, Congress is a crime wave, study says

WASHINGTON, DC -- A new investigation reveals an astonishingly large number of wife-beaters, drunks, shoplifters, check-bouncers, business failures, and drug abusers in the U.S. House and Senate -- which ought to make Americans think carefully before turning to Washington, DC for moral leadership, the Libertarian Party said today.

"Mark Twain once said Congress may be America's only 'distinct criminal class' -- and this new study suggests he was correct," said Steve Dasbach, the party's national director. "If even half these charges are true, expecting Congress to serve as a moral role model is like asking Bill Clinton to serve as a poster boy for monogamy." According to an investigation by Capitol Hill Blue, an online publication that covers federal politics, a remarkable number of U.S. Representatives and U.S. Senators may have spent as much time in a jail cell as on Capitol Hill. After researching public records, newspaper articles, civil court transcripts, and criminal records, Capitol Hill Blue discovered that:

** 29 members of Congress have been accused of spousal abuse.*

** 7 have been arrested for fraud.*

- * 19 have been accused of writing bad checks.
- * 117 have bankrupted at least two businesses.
- * 3 have been arrested for assault.
- * 71 have credit reports so bad they can't qualify for a credit card.
- * 14 have been arrested on drug-related charges.
- * 8 have been arrested for shoplifting.
- * 21 are current defendants in lawsuits.
- * 84 were stopped for drunk driving in 1998 alone, but released after they claimed Congressional immunity.

Capitol Hill Blue did not list the names of all the individual members of Congress accused of the various crimes, but did note that some were "serial offenders" with extensive tracks records of fraud or violence. For example, reported Capitol Hill Blue, Rep. Corrine Brown (D-FL) has a "long, consistent record of deceit," including tens of thousands of dollars in unpaid bills, allegations of bribery, and numerous lawsuits against her. And Rep. Jim Moran (D-VA) faces charges that he beat his wife, has a history of barroom brawls while mayor of Alexandria, and has publicly stated that he likes "to hit people."

"With a rap sheet like that, you have to wonder why Americans expect Congress to solve the problem of crime -- since Congress seems to be causing so much crime," said Dasbach. "In fact, if this study is correct, the best way to cut crime may be to lock up Congress and throw away the key."

And given the obvious economic incompetence of so many Senators and Representatives, you have to wonder why voters trust them with the federal budget, he said. "Here are politicians who routinely bankrupt businesses, write bad checks, engage in fraudulent practices, and have bad credit," said Dasbach. "That could explain why the country is more than \$5 trillion in debt, why federal programs are so wasteful, and why taxes are always going up. Are these really the kind of economically illiterate people we want to trust with our money?"

If nothing else, said Dasbach, the Capitol Hill Blue investigation may help puncture the myth that Senators and Representatives are somehow superior to ordinary Americans, or better equipped to solve the nation's problems. "By its very nature, politics tends to attract venal people who crave power, who want to control the lives of other people, and who think they are above the law," he noted. "This study makes that point clear -- and illustrates that when it comes to politicians, the only thing worse than their voting records are their criminal records."

7.7 Role of Citizens

"The price of freedom is eternal vigilance."
[Anonymous]

One of the roles of citizens is to be politically involved. We covered this subject in detail in section 2.3.13: Political Involvement (as one important aspect of Christian character). In addition, several other roles of Christians as citizens emerge:

Table 7-3: Role of Citizens

#	Responsibility	Description	Scripture(s)
1	Friendship with the world is enmity with God	Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God.	James 4:4
2	Do not marry unbelievers	Do not be unequally yoked together with unbelievers. For what fellowship has righteousness with lawlessness? And what communion has light with darkness? And what accord has Christ with Belial? Or what part has a believer with an unbeliever? And what agreement has the temple of God with idols? For you are the temple of the living God.	2 Cor. 6:14-16
3	Take care of your own (your family and relatives)	But if anyone does not provide for his own, and especially for those of his household, he has denied the faith and is worse than an unbeliever.	1 Tim. 5:8
4	Do not be greedy for gain/selfish	He who is greedy for gain troubles his own house, but he who hates bribes will live.	Prov. 15:27
5	Seek knowledge	The heart of the prudent acquires knowledge, and the ear of the wise seeks knowledge.	Prov. 18:15
6	Seek wisdom	He who gets wisdom loves his own soul; he who keeps understanding will find good.	Prov. 19:8
7	Don't be lazy	Do not love sleep, lest you come to poverty; open your eyes and you will be satisfied with bread.	Prov. 20:13
8	Be diligent	The plans of the diligent lead surely to plenty, but those of everyone who is hasty, surely to poverty.	Prov. 21:5
9	Excel at your work	Do you see a man who excels in his work? He will stand before kings; he will not stand before unknown men.	Prov. 22:29
10	Avoid and do not envy evil men	Do not be envy evil men, nor desire to be with them; for their heart devised violence, and their lips talk of troublemaking.	Prov. 24:1-2
11	Do not rejoice when your enemy falls	Do not rejoice when your enemy falls, and do not let your heart be glad when he stumbles; lest the Lord see it, and it displease Him, and he turn away His wrath from him.	Prov. 24:17-18
12	Rebuke the wicked	But those who rebuke the wicked will have delight, and a good blessing will come upon them.	Prov. 24:25
13	Don't visit your neighbor too often. Give people privacy	Seldom set foot in your neighbor's house, lest he become wary of you and hate you.	Prov. 25:17
14	Favor integrity over affluence	Better is the poor who walks in his integrity, than one perverse in his ways, though he be rich.	Prov. 28:6
15	Homosexuality is wrong	You shall not lie with a male as with a woman. It is an abomination.	Lev. 18:22
16	Do not worship idols	You shall not make yourself a carved image—any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth; you shall not bow down to them nor serve them. For I, the Lord your	Exodus 20:4-6

#	Responsibility	Description	Scripture(s)
		God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children to the third and fourth generations of those who hate Me, but showing mercy to thousands to those who love Me and keep My commandments.	
17	Do not swear	You shall not take the name of the Lord your God in vain, for the Lord will not hold him guiltless who takes His name in vain.	Exodus 20:7
18	Do not murder (this includes abortion)	You shall not murder.	Exodus 20:13
19	Do not commit adultery (even if the law says its OK)	You shall not commit adultery.	Exodus 20:14
20	Do not steal	You shall not steal.	Exodus 20:15
21	Do not bear false witness (even if the law doesn't punish liars)	You shall not bear false witness against your neighbor.	Exodus 20:16
22	Do not covet anything of your neighbor's	You shall not covet your neighbor's house; you shall not covet your neighbor's wife, nor his male servant, nor his female servant, nor his ox, nor his donkey, nor anything that is your neighbor's.	Exodus 20:17

7.8 The Nature of Property

The concept that our nation is based on is the idea that the law protects our rights as citizens to own property. Property is defined legally as follows:

"Every species of valuable right or interest that is subject to ownership, has an exchangeable value, or adds to one's wealth or estate. Property describes one's exclusive right to possess, use, and dispose of a thing, as well as the object, benefit, or prerogative which constitutes the subject matter of that right."⁹³

Ownership of property is defined legally as follows:

"One's exclusive right of possessing, enjoying, and disposing of a thing. The term has been given a wide range of meanings but is often said to comprehend both the concept of possession and, further, that the title and thus to be broader than either."⁹⁴

Based on the above definitions, let's consider whether you really own those things that you think you own, or whether you have been deceived by the government into thinking that you own them when really someone else might own them. Let me give you a few examples of what I am talking about:

1. REAL PROPERTY:

1.1. **Tax auctions:** You may think you own land or buildings and you may be listed at the county courthouse on the title for real property as the "owner". Being listed or registered as the owner

⁹³ Barron's Law Dictionary, Steven H. Gifis, ISBN 0-8120-3096-6, Barron's Educational Series, Inc., 1996, p. 399.

⁹⁴ Barron's Law Dictionary, Steven H. Gifis, ISBN 0-8120-3096-6, Barron's Educational Series, Inc., 1996, p. 357.

in the "title" simply entitles you to pay a ransom to the government every year in the form of property taxes, which in effect are a bribe to the government to protect your right to control and keep the property. If you don't give the government their annual bribe (rent your own property from the government?), then guess what: They will then put your property up instantly for sale against your will in what is called a "tax auction" and sell it to the highest bidder. As long as they recover the overdue taxes on the property, they don't care what value they sell the property for, and if they sell it only for the amount of back taxes to some lucky low-bidder because he is only one person shows up to the auction, then in effect, they have legally sanctioned a theft of your property without your consent through this tax sale. In this circumstance, all the equity represented by the difference between the fair market value of your property and the actual sale price is in effect gifted to the person who buys the property. Even if you want the government to put the house up on the open market and sell it at its real fair market value and give you the difference between your equity and what you owe in taxes, you have no legal right to demand this treatment of your so-called "property" as a delinquent tax payer. Could it be that the government is the one that really owns your property and you just rent it from them with property taxes? You decide.

- 1.2. Asset forfeiture laws: If you are an apartment owner, and the police discover before you do that you have a tenant on the premises who is trafficking in drugs and if they can prove that you knew about it, then they can confiscate the entire building from you and sell it without your consent and give you nothing back in return!

2. BANK ACCOUNTS:

- 2.1. Taxes and court judgements. These days, virtually everyone who opens up a bank account is required *by the bank but not by the law* to provide their Social Security Number (we call it Socialist Security Number). They then report this information to the credit bureaus and the IRS. Once the IRS finds out about your bank account, then they can search their databases to locate your bank accounts if they want to seize your assets. The IRS and courts will quite commonly levy (seize) assets by this technique in the enforcement of court judgments, child or spousal support, and tax deficiencies.
- 2.2. Divorce. If you are married and decide to get a divorce, the courts can take bank accounts that have your name as the only accountholder and divide the proceeds in half and give the other half to your wife against your will, even if she contributed nothing to the account and hid all the money she had just prior to the divorce. This is based on the fallacious idea of "community property".

3. PERSONAL PROPERTY:

- 3.1. Divorce: Personal property is such things as cars, stereo equipment, tools, etc. You may think you own these things, but if you are married and get a divorce, the courts can give half of these assets to your spouse as community property, even if you object.
- 3.2. Drug asset forfeiture laws: Likewise, under asset forfeiture laws, they can take and sell everything you have if they think it is involved with drug trafficking. For instance, if you are driving through a state that has an asset forfeiture law, and a policeman decides he likes your car and wants it, he can stop you without probable cause, search your vehicle, and find drugs in your car (if it was a used vehicle that the previous owner used for drug trafficking) and then seize your vehicle and sell it at auction and keep the proceeds for his police society. That happened in Mississippi.

- 3.3. Lack of vehicle registration: If you neglect to register your vehicle and drive it anyway, some states will confiscate it and sell it while you look helplessly on. They will not refund any of the money to your resulting from the sale.

Based on the above, we ask you: *"Is it your property if they can take it from you and seize it against your will? According to the definitions above, an owner has 'exclusive right to possess, use, and dispose of a thing.' How exclusive is that right if they can take it from you without your consent?"*

What are some ways that you can ensure that what your property rights are respected?:

1. Vote at all elections to ensure that your voice is heard.
2. Campaign for office in order to change the laws.
3. Vote against asset forfeiture laws or candidates who support such laws.
4. Vote against property taxes and candidates who support property taxes.
5. Eliminate the use of social security numbers on all your financial accounts to the best of your ability.
6. Support reforms in the way that tax auctions are executed by the government. Liens ought to be preferred over tax auctions.
7. Sign petitions to get initiatives on the ballot that would support the above ideas.
8. Ensure that if you do get married, the two parties sign a prenuptial agreement that eliminates the influence of the state on the property rights of the spouses, including the elimination of the concept of community property within the marriage. Refer to section 9.9: Prenuptial Agreement, for further details.

7.9 Thomas Jefferson on Property Rights and the Foundations of Our Government

Thomas Jefferson was the wise and brilliant man who wrote the Constitution of the United States. Before we launch into what our government is doing to violate our property rights with its illegal taxatin policies, lets look at what he had to say about property rights:

"The true foundation of republican government is the equal right of every citizen in his person and property and in their management."
[Thomas Jefferson to Samuel Kercheval, 1816. ME 15:36]

The right to procure property and to use it for one's own enjoyment is essential to the freedom of every person, and our other rights would mean little without these rights of property ownership. It is also for these reasons that the government's power to tax property is placed in those representatives most frequently and directly responsible to the people, since it is the people themselves who must pay those taxes out of their holdings of property.

"Persons and property make the sum of the objects of government."
[Thomas Jefferson to James Madison, 1789. ME 7:459]

"Nothing is ours, which another may deprive us of."
[Thomas Jefferson to Maria Cosway, 1786. ME 5:440]

By nature's law, every man has a right to seize and retake by force his own property taken from him by another by force or fraud. Nor is this natural right among the first which is taken into the hands of regular government after it is instituted. It was long

retained by our ancestors. It was a part of their common law, laid down in their books, recognized by all the authorities, and regulated as to circumstances of practice."
 [Thomas Jefferson: *Batture at New Orleans, 1812. ME 18:104*]

"To take from one because it is thought that his own industry and that of his father's has acquired too much, in order to spare to others, who, or whose fathers have not exercised equal industry and skill, is to violate arbitrarily the first principle of association--'the guarantee to every one of a free exercise of his industry and the fruits acquired by it.'"
 [Thomas Jefferson: *Note in Destutt de Tracy's "Political Economy," 1816. ME 14:466*]

"[The] rights [of the people] to the exercise and fruits of their own industry can never be protected against the selfishness of rulers not subject to their control at short periods."
 [Thomas Jefferson to Isaac H. Tiffany, 1816.]

"Our wish... is that... equality of rights [be] maintained, and that state of property, equal or unequal, which results to every man from his own industry or that of his fathers."
 [Thomas Jefferson: *2nd Inaugural Address, 1805. ME 3:382*]

"If the overgrown wealth of an individual is deemed dangerous to the State, the best corrective is the law of equal inheritance to all in equal degree; and the better, as this enforces a law of nature, while extra-taxation violates it."
 [Thomas Jefferson: *Note in Destutt de Tracy's "Political Economy," 1816. ME 14:466*]

7.10 Testaments of Truth

Thirteen testaments in honor of the original thirteen united States.

By Christopher Holloman Hansen (sovereign@mykingdom.com)

"... where the spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.'" I

[I Cor. 3:17]

1. **We Recognize as Truth** that Jesus Christ is the "*Supreme Judge*" of this Nation and that our freedom and unalienable rights are granted by Him, not by governments; we are therefore authorized by Him to be Sovereigns. (Rev. 1:6 and 5:10)
2. **We Recognize as Truth:** The Bible, all teachings of Jesus Christ, The Ten Commandments, The *Declaration of Independence*, The *Constitution of the United States*, The *Bill of Rights* and George Washington's *Farewell Address*.
3. **We Recognize as Truth** that our original Constitutional Government was instituted by God for the benefit of man. That it was created by "We the People" and their agents, the Sovereign States, by a contract known as The *Constitution of the United States of America*.
4. **We Recognize as Truth** that the federal government is only a contracted agent of the Sovereign States and that if any branch of the federal government violates that contract the Sovereign States, acting in unison, severally or individually, have the duty to redress that violation through State sponsored legislation and enforced action.
5. **We Recognize as Truth** that if the Sovereign States fail to redress federal usurpation of power that "We the People" have the "Duty." according to the *Declaration of Independence*, and the "rights" and "powers," according to the 9th and 10th Amendments to act in unison, severally or as individuals "to throw off that Government law by law (and peacefully if possible) and to provide new Guards for our future security.
6. **We Recognize as Truth** that any form of **numerical identification or NAME CHANGE**, such as the Social Security Identification Number and/or a NEW SATANIC NAME, of individual Sovereigns or their children is a direct violation of the First, Fourth, Fifth, Ninth, Tenth, and Thirteenth Amendments to the *Constitution* and is, either a precursor to or in actuality, the prophesied numerical satanic "**Mark of the Beast**" and we reject them on both legal and religious grounds.
7. **We Recognize as Truth** that parents are responsible for their children and for their moral standards, education and religious beliefs and that the proper role of parenthood and its Biblically sanctioned duties and restrictions are found within the Holy Bible and that governmental interference with parental authority is in violation of the First Amendment.
8. **We Recognize as Truth** that no government has the right to force adults or children (under the direction of their parents) into any form of involuntary servitude, except as punishment for a crime whereof the party shall have been duly convicted by an **informed jury**. That

Family Constitution, version 1.30

Copyright Family Guardian Fellowship

<http://famguardian.org>

involuntary servitude includes, but is not limited to, the forced or coerced indoctrination or teaching of any kind; and therefore, all "education" must be totally voluntary.

9. We Recognize as Truth that the First Amendment strictly forbids the making of any law that would prohibit the free exercise of religion and that any government agency promoting the belief that humanity has no Creator not only infringes on the free exercise of religion but, also undermines the very basis of our Republic which was founded upon unalienable rights given us by our Creator. ***The Eternal Truth is: If we have no Creator we have no rights.***

10. We Recognize as Truth that if we, as individuals, knowingly obey any law that helps to limit our God given Unalienable rights and enslave us, our posterity or any people, that we are guilty of Crimes against Humanity, as defined by the International Military Tribunal at Nuremberg, "the true test...is not the existence of the order but whether moral choice in executing it) 'was in fact possible.'" We also believe, as stated by Benjamin Franklin, "They that can give up essential liberty to obtain a little temporary safety deserve neither liberty nor safety." We, therefore, cannot tolerate even the slightest loss of our sovereignty, rights, or freedom and in the words of Thomas Jefferson, "find nothing so dreadful as voluntary slavery."

11. We Recognize as Truth that all men are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights. They include: Life, Liberty, and the pursuit of Happiness; and that, above all law is the eternal difference between right and wrong; and that, we are personally responsible for our own actions. Ignorance is not a defense against the decree of this Higher Law but knowledge of this Higher Law more fully condemns the educated.

12. We Recognize as Truth that the War Powers Act, Presidential Executive Orders Article I and IV Tribunals, the General Welfare Clause and the Commerce Clause of the *Constitution* have been blatantly misconstrued and abused by all three branches of the federal government so that they may intentionally abrogate Constitutional limits in order to advance their ever growing tyrannical power.

13. We Recognize as Truth that freedom is not merely the right to choose, but that, ***freedom is the result of right choices***; that freedom is not free and that "*We the People*" must be eternally valiant, vigilant and perform "Exploits" (Dan. 11:32) if we are to regain our freedoms anti-constitutionally pillaged and plundered by the United States federal government and its agents and assignees including but not limited to: The New World Order, United Nations, Federal Reserve, IRS, SSA, OSHA, EPA, BATF, DEA, NEA and BLM; and/or also confiscated, abandoned and/or forfeited by our State governments.

7.11 The Freedom Test

7.11.1 Are You Free or Do You Just Think You Are?

(If you have any doubts just answer the following 12 questions and you will know for sure.)

1. Is more than 15% of your hard earned income forcibly being taken away from you through taxation by your government? (yes or no)
2. Does your government force you to participate in Social Security and Medicare? (yes or no)
3. Is your Social Security number being used by your government to monitor your income, bank accounts and other activities? (yes or no)
4. Is your government engaging in e-mail surveillance operations without probable cause or search warrants? (yes or no)
5. When re-entering your own country after a vacation can your government search you and your belongings without probable cause or a search warrant? (yes or no)
6. Does your government require you to apply, gain its permission, and pay additional taxes for permits in order to simply add on a room or remodel your own home, on your own property? (yes or no)
7. Does your government tax your very ability to talk and communicate with family and friends? (yes or no)
8. Does your government practice discrimination against or preference for any individual or group of individuals based upon their race, creed, gender, or social class? (yes or no)
9. If a nationwide television network interviewed you on a variety of political topics would you hide some of your true beliefs for fear of the consequences of publicly crossing the boundaries of 'political correctness'? (yes or no)
10. Has your government accumulated an overbearing National Debt liability for you, your children and grandchildren to pay off? (yes or no)
11. Is your government dominated by politicians more beholden to their egos and corporate patrons than to you and your individual rights? (yes or no)
12. Do you still think you are free? (yes or no)

7.11.2 Key to Answers

1. **YES.** In the United States today the average individual pays nearly 50% of his or her income in taxes of one form or another. When 50% of your work day (4 of every 8 hours) is forcibly being taken from you by your government, is that not state sponsored slavery?

The successful examples of the United States (1800-1929) and modern day Hong Kong have proven that the legitimate operations of government can be funded by a total individual tax of 15% or less of income. Why, and from what authority, are we being forced to pay more?

Please note that the federal income tax in the United States is only half of the tax picture, for one must also consider the following: state income taxes, state disability taxes, social security taxes, medicare taxes, medicaid taxes, unemployment insurance taxes, local taxes, property taxes, capital gains taxes, estate and inheritance taxes, gift taxes, sales taxes, electricity taxes, water taxes, sewage taxes, telephone taxes, cable taxes, corporate taxes, import taxes, export taxes, luxury taxes, gasoline taxes, alcohol taxes, tobacco taxes, vehicle registration taxes, hotel accommodation taxes, airplane ticket taxes, rental car taxes, building permit taxes, regulation taxes, licensing taxes, parking taxes, etc. (Note that the average individual in Europe pays far more than 50%.)

2. **YES.** When Social Security was first enacted in 1935 it was funded by a 2% payroll tax, today it is funded by a 12.4% payroll tax. The Social Security tax has been raised 54 times in a mere 65 years, measuring a staggering 520% increase. It is now the largest single tax for seven out of 10 taxpaying households. In 1935 only the first \$3,000 of taxpayer income was subject to Social Security taxes, by 1971 it was the first \$7,800, and today it is the first \$72,600. Medicare/medicaid, started in 1965, was initially funded by a 2.9% payroll tax, with only the first \$4,800 of taxpayer income subject to it. Today the rate is the same, however the income cap has been removed. Even with these dramatic expansions of taxation, both programs are still on the verge of bankruptcy. (This means more tax increases to come in the next economic downturn.) Because you are forced to participate, Social Security and Medicare are without a doubt the largest PONZI SCHEMES ever conceived of. Yet no politician will dare say so. Who is going to pay the Social Security and Medicare benefits for the 78 million baby boomers set to begin retiring in 2010?
3. **YES.** Try to get a job, open a bank or brokerage account, or buy a home without one.
4. **YES.** Take a hard look at the new FBI system known as Carnivore. Once it is connected to an ISP network it has the potential to monitor all communications on that network. Earthlink Inc. has already refused to install this FBI system, saying it had no way of knowing whether it was in fact limiting its surveillance operations to the criminal investigation at hand, or trolling more broadly. (What happened to the protections guaranteed us by the 4th Amendment to the U.S. Constitution?)
5. **YES.** If you doubt this, try crossing from Mexico to the U.S. in an older model van with tinted windows. (What happened to the protections guaranteed us by the 4th Amendment to the U.S. Constitution?)
6. **YES.** The state, city and local governments of the United States have completely undermined the sacred principle of 'property rights' by forcing us to seek government permission to carry out routine additions and changes to our private property, by forcing us to pay building permit taxes for the right to do so, and by forcing us to pay property taxes or face its confiscation.
7. **YES.** Take a close look at the taxes you are forced to pay for both your wired and wireless phone services. Also note the United Nations report of July 1999 which specifically endorses a tax of one American cent to be levied on all lengthy e-mails. E-mail taxes are next if we let down our guard.
8. **YES.** Government first rationalized the existence of slavery, then it rationalized the existence of segregation, and now it rationalizes the existence of affirmative action and quotas. ALL are discrimination, and ALL are wrong.
9. **YES,** for most of us. Is it really 'Freedom of Speech' when you are afraid to speak your mind?
10. **YES.** As of September 1, 2000 the U.S. National Debt was over \$5.64
11. **TRILLION** and growing by an average of \$45 million per day. With the U.S. population estimated to be 276,299,415, that means each citizen's share of this debt is over \$20,425. Ignore the rhetoric of the politicians when they claim to be paying down this debt with the budget surpluses, because they are NOT. In fact this Congress, the Republican majority 106th, has become the largest domestic spending Congress since the late 1970's.
12. **YES.** Take a hard look at the politicians and their voting records if you doubt this.
13. **NO,** we are not free, we only think we are. The time has come for us to face this difficult truth and start doing something about it.

7.11.3 Do you Still Think You are Free?

ARE YOU TRULY FREE... when over half of your hard earned “money” is stolen, directly and indirectly, by “legalized fraud” called “income taxes” to support unconscionable spending habits of career politicians... and rulers around the world? And,

ARE YOU TRULY FREE...when government agents falsely accuse people of “crimes” shoot and kill a nursing mother and child (Weaver), use banned gas to burn out over 80 people (Waco Holocaust), Gordon Call, etc. And,

ARE YOU TRULY FREE...when you are deprived of your currency which you worked hard for, paid taxes on? The \$1,000 and \$500 bills were slyly taken out of circulation. When anyone DOES NOT want to play the game of “cashless, checkless society” he is accused of “breaking the law”. Plastic strips are now inserted in the new currency. Bankers/government claim anyone with a large amount of cash is a criminal. This violates many religious beliefs such as Rev.,13:16-18. The conspirators’ real purpose is to work for the private bankers, putting us in a cashless, checkless society. And,

WHEN...in our “LAND OF THE FREE” you can no longer drive on freeways or public street without buying a driver’s license and car registration from bureaucrats...giving them LEGAL TITLE of OWNERSHIP to your car in exchange for a “certificate of title” that shows you gave your “true ownership” AWAY? And,

WHEN...BUREAUCRATS MAKE YOU PAY legal ransom to a private insurance-company so you can drive your car? And,

WHEN...in our “LAND OF THE FREE” you must send your children to a licensed school or bureaucrats can/will legally kidnap your children, confiscate your property and put you in jail? And,

When...you must read non-mainstream publications in order to learn THE TRUTH, because the national news media tells only what the “political establishment” allows it’s public to see or hear as “news”..? And,

WHEN...OUR “LAND OF THE FREE” has more political-prisoners than other nations; more slave-labor-camp-prisons (UNICOR) are being built every year? And,

WHEN...bureaucrats claim a crime needs ‘no victim’ by claiming a crime is an offense against an abstract (legal fiction) called the state? And,

WHEN...business-income taxes are piled on top of each other...hidden in the prices of every American product, GROSSLY INFLATING costs, forcing industries to leave our country...taking millions of our best jobs with them? And,

WHEN... in our “LAND OF THE FREE” bureaucrats can know most of your financial transactions and “legally pry” into your bank records without your knowledge or consent? (violating a sacred trust, your privacy, and 4th amendment right). And,

WHEN ...you believe the BIG-LIE that your RIGHTS come from “public servants” instead of from ALMIGHTY GOD, Creator of all nature? And,

WHEN you “pay” your debts with dollar bills which are notices of debt you owe to the PRIVATELY OWNED Federal Reserve Banks (a private corporation) which pay no income taxes...and who create money out of thin air? And,

WHEN...in our “LAND OF THE FREE” “public servants” have created a spider web of over TWO MILLION laws and rules entangling every part of your life with entrapment schemes, (Road Blocks)-etc., while “supreme court” judges seldom agree on the meaning of any of them? And,

WHEN...if you don't pay your taxes (rent) the real owner of your property shows up, takes it from you, violating Allodial Land Rights ... and may/will shoot you, or put you in jail. And,

WHEN...in our “LAND OF THE FREE” it's okay to legally murder unborn babies, cleverly calling aborticide “abortion” And,

WHEN... “public-servant judges” illegally guide votes of Citizen Jurors by LYING, telling them they must vote to enforce the “alleged laws” of the case (even if it violates Rights secured by the constitution)? And,

WHEN...the word “person” is “legally defined” as a “corporation” and judges and government lawyers Coerce Juries into jailing fellow Americans for disobeying laws made for private bankers and private corporations to CONTROL our once FREE PEOPLE? And,

WHEN...your church must get a 501-C3 license (tax exempt) so its members can “write off gifts”-legally worship the “state god”, not ALMIGHTY GOD, Creator of all nature? And,

WHEN...career-politicians, tax collectors, police and courts (judges) are more of a threat to life, liberty and property than a thief in the night? (Been in court lately?) And,

WHEN you SADLY LEARN..More crimes occur in American court rooms in one day than in the streets in a whole year?

WHEN...in our “LAND OF THE FREE” your children are a ward of the state because you used a marriage license? (Your children are not your children because of that license!) And,

WHEN...you are jailed for exercising your God-given Constitutionally secured Rights if you don't “grease the palms” (fines=mulct) of bureaucrats? And,

WHEN...in our “LAND OF THE FREE” YOU CAN NO LONGER PRACTICE Free Enterprise or work without the SS-ID number, “Mark of the Beast”, and you are forced to buy a permit or license from bureaucrats or go to jail? And,

WHEN everything you and your children will ever “own” is mortgaged to foreign bankers who own the private Federal Reserve Banks, your loan could be due and collectible on demand...BECAUSE THE CONGRESS REFUSES to OBEY the CONSTITUTION providing our nation with a debt-free, Honest money system! And,

WHEN...you could be dying from a disease (cancer) that is curable in other countries (suppressed in AmeriKa since the early 30's) with certain medicines, nutrients, and vitamins which, if used to save

your life, is a crime in our “LAND OF THE FREE” stripping us of our 1st and 9th amendment Rights, FREEDOM of CHOICE? And,

WHEN... if you say something publicly that is not “Politically Correct”, the news-media can publicly condemn you without a trial, by implying you are a racist, cultist, neo-nazi, anti-Semitic, hate monger, bigot, radical, armed and dangerous, extreme-right-winger, tax-protester, un-American...etc.? And,

WHEN...the Federal Government pretends to wage a “War On Drugs” (actually promoting drugs) as an excuse to make laws that deprive us of our God-given RIGHTS to Life, Liberty, and Property ...Freedom to Choose and to be Left Alone? And,

WHEN...CRIME PAYS BIG... for Big Brother Government, lying politicians, judges, government lawyers, police...because every new law causes many more victimless crimes as an excuse for higher and higher taxes, supposedly used to punish the violators (victims) of newly invented crimes, which God never thought of, against a legal fiction, the State? And,

WHEN...in our “LAND OF THE FREE” the flag displayed in court rooms and other public buildings has a gold fringe border, which is NOT the American flag, indicating that we are under Martial Law unannounced? And,

WHEN..... you must ask and pay bureaucrats for legal permission to get married, even though marriage is a sacrament directly from our loving father, ALMIGHTY GOD? And,

WHEN...Republican and Democratic Presidents give your taxes to foreign countries, food that should be given to our needy is given to foreign nations, destroying our own people...our self-defense arms are confiscated...creating wars and riots; the United States Military is under the United Nations command...YOUR JOB exported overseas...our “LAND OF THE FREE” PLACED UNDER THE DICTATORIAL RULE of NON-ELECTED FOREIGNERS called the NEW WORLD ORDER?! Creating wars and riots;

IF THIS IS FREEDOM Then WHAT is SLAVERY???

If You Think You're FREE,
What can you do without:

- A. getting a permit?
- B. getting a license?
- C. paying a tax?
- D. your Social Surveillance-ID # (should not be used for identification)?

7.12 Sources of Government Tyranny and Oppression

7.12.1 Deception: The Religion of SATAN and our government

Question: How can you tell if either a lawyer or a politician are lying?

Answer: Their lips are moving.

Satan is referred to by many names throughout the Bible, as indicated below:

- Lawless one (2 Thess. 2:3-17)
- Adversary (1 Pet. 5:8)
- Accuser (Rev. 12:10)
- Wicked one (Matt. 13:19)
- Murderer (John 8:44)

In his essence, Satan is a false accuser, a slanderer, an adversary, and a liar. Satan's chief weapon in perpetrating his opposition to the will of God is deception.

“You are of your father the devil, and the desires of your father you want to do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own resources, for he is a liar and the father of it.”

[John 8:44, Bible, NKJV]

The definition of “Devil” further explains these conclusions from Strong’s Concordance of the Bible:

***Devil**, diabolos (dee-ab-ol-oss). This adjective, which literally means “slandorous”, is derived from the verb diabollo, “to bring charges with hostile intent” (justly or slanderously, usually the latter). Although diabolos retains its adjectival meaning occasionally in the NT (1 Tim. 3:11; Titus 2:3), in most instances it is used substantively as a proper name for a specific “slanderer”—the “devil” (Matt. 4; Luke 4; Eph. 6:11). This use of the word is already established in the Septuagint, where it occurs frequently as a translation of the Heb. Satan (“adversary”). The association of the “devil” with Satan continues in the NT (e.g., John 13:2, 27; Rev. 20:2). (Strongs #1228)*

Obviously, in order to successfully slander someone, one must be a bold, arrogant, conceited, and convincing liar. In some cases, people make such evil into a profession. They walk around with suits and ties and briefcases slandering their opponents in front of juries, judges, and the media using lies and charging exorbitant amounts for their dis-service to society. The name of such professions are:

- Politicians
- Democrats
- Judges
- Attorneys
- Lawyers

respectively! The only profession ever criticized in the bible by Jesus was the practice of law, as a matter of fact, and now you know why. Also keep in mind that the majority of politicians and nearly all judges are or were also lawyers. See Matt. 23:23 to learn what Jesus thought of these people, and its not pretty!

The following scripture compares and contrasts liars from the righteous to help you discern them:

*“He who speaks truth declares righteousness,
But a false witness deceit.
There is one who speaks like the piercings of a sword,
But the tongue of the wise promotes health.
The truthful lip shall be established forever,
But a lying tongue is but for a moment.*

*Deceit is in the heart of those who devise evil.
But counselors of peace have joy.
No grave trouble will overtake the righteous,
But the wicked shall be filled with evil.
Lying lips are an abomination to the Lord,
but those who deal truthfully are His delight.”
[Prov. 12:17-22, Bible, NKJV]*

*“The righteous man hates lying.”
[Prov. 13:5, Bible, NKJV]*

The Apostle James explains what Satan’s religion is, which is **Deception**, in James 1:26:

*“If any among you thinks he is religious, and does not bridle his tongue but deceives his own heart, this one’s religion is useless.”
[James 1:26, Bible, NKJV]*

Notice that James above would appear to have referred to “deception” as *a religion* and he called it “useless”. Other versions of the bible replace the word “useless” with “vain”. Vanity is sometimes synonymous with “pride”. It was Satan’s *pride* that caused him to *rebel* against God and *slander* God.

*“In the mouth of a fool is a rod of pride.
But the lips of the wise will preserve them.”
[Prov. 14:3, Bible, NKJV]*

*“Pride goes before destruction, and a haughty spirit before a fall. Better to be of a humble spirit with the lowly, than to divide the spoil with the proud.”
[Prov. 16:18-19, Bible, NKJV]*

Our politicians and their slavery mongers and mafioso extortionists at the IRS have the same motives as Satan: pride and covetousness, which are manifested or evidenced by slander, lies, and deception. Satan coveted God’s power and authority and he wanted to be God and replace God. Everything he does is a cheap imitation of God’s true sovereignty and is based on deceit and deception. He is a rebel at heart and he lusts after God’s power. Our politicians are no different: they lust after power and prestige, which means they can’t act like the public *servants* that they are. They commonly try to deceive their constituents into thinking, for instance, that they are the equivalent of gods and kings. They want you to think that they are the sovereigns and you are the servants, even though you will find out later in chapter 4 that the opposite is actually true, and the only reason people believe otherwise is their own legal ignorance. The scumbag politicians and lawyers do this by boldly going around and lying about their authority and what the law says. And if the law too clearly states the truth, then they will try to obfuscate it so that you have to rely on them to “interpret it” for you, and what do you think they are going to say that it says: “They are the sovereigns and you are ‘subject to’ them and their laws”. And when the truth comes out occasionally about how very little authority they really have, then they try to silence the messenger rather than agree with the message using the press and lots of false propaganda. The Department of **In**justice has a whole section of their website devoted to such deceptive LIES and propaganda at the web address below:

http://www.usdoj.gov/03press/03_1_1.html

Power in the political realm is summarized in one word: jurisdiction. Politicians know that most of their power and jurisdiction derives from economic means. To the extent that they control the money is the extent to which they think that they run the country. They use money as a means to create

“privilege-induced slavery”, where they make it a “taxable privilege” to receive some kind of government benefit or a “privilege” in order to keep the money that is rightfully yours, and then they force you to do something under the color of law in order to qualify for the “privilege”. Unfortunately, the things that they make into “privileges” are your “rights”, which means you have no liberties left after they fiddle with the laws!

When you do your research and uncover their lies and their fraud, since they don’t want to be exposed or convicted for committing perjury or fraud, then they instead will create a big bureaucracy to respond to your issues to make it at least “appear” that they are “trying” to help you, and then they deliberately make it so big and inefficient and wasteful and unresponsive that it never responds to any of your concerns. That way, what is *really* an evasion of the truth, an outright acquiescence to a lie, a constructive fraud, and an oppression of your rights looks far more innocuous and can be described with far gentler words like “inefficiency” and “bureaucracy” and “an opportunity for improvement”. They will hire “clerks” within these bloated bureaucracies to respond who are so under-qualified and underpaid that they make easy scapegoats for the fraud of their superiors. Then when you litigate and expose the fraud to juries, they will do the same thing that Satan tries to do: slander and discredit and murder your character with lies and threaten the judge with an audit and collection activity if he doesn’t go along with the game. This is the very definition of evil, if you ask us, and the foundation of it is the *religion of deception* that perpetuates the power, the money, and the prestige that so many politicians covet but seldom obtain. The Bible in 2 Tim. 3:1-9 describes all of the personality characteristics of the kind of warped people we have elected to be our contemporary politicians and the kind of DOJ lawyers that they have working for them to perpetrate such EVIL:

“But know this, that in the last days perilous times will come: for men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, unloving, unforgiving, slanderers, without self-control, brutal, despisers of good, traitors, headstrong, haughty, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God, having a form of godliness but denying its power [God’s sovereignty over them and the government]. And from such people turn away! For of this sort are those who creep into households and make captives of gullible women loaded down with sins, led away by various lusts, always learning and never able to come to the knowledge of truth. Now as Jannes and Jambres resisted Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, disapproved concerning the faith; but they will progress no further, for their folly will be manifest to all, as theirs also was.”
[2 Tim. 3:1-9, Bible, NKJV]

The bible also describes the collective governments and corrupted politicians in them who are at war with God because of their evil deceit, sinfulness, and idolatry described above. It calls them the “beast” in the book of Revelation.

“And I saw the beast, the kings [political rulers] of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against Him [God] who sat on the horse and against His army.”
[Revelation 19:19, Bible, NKJV]

Incidentally, it is this same “beast” that issues its mark to all its followers: the Socialist Security Number. What makes the “beast” to be at war with God is the vain use of the religion of deception and the encouragement of the sheep in God’s flock to practice idolatry toward government by making government into a false god.

“Cursed is the one who trusts in man [for man-made government], who depends on flesh for his strength and whose heart turns away from the Lord. He will be like a bush in the wastelands; he will not see prosperity when it comes. He will dwell in the parched places of the desert, in a salt land where no one lives. But blessed is the man who trusts in the Lord, whose confidence is in Him. He will be like a tree planted by the water that sends out its roots by the stream. It does not fear when heat comes; its leaves are always green. It has no worries in a year of drought and never fails to bear fruit.”
 [Jeremiah 17:5-8, Bible, NIV]

People in government want to be worshipped and feared just like the God they are imitating and competing with, so they will make the people afraid for their safety and then offer their false power and sovereignty and protection as a cheap substitute for the real God. Remember, the purpose of governments, like God, is to protect the people. God goes one step beyond government by actually loving the people too, in fulfillment of the second greatest commandment found in Matt 22:39. Atheistic and socialistic governments forget that part of their stewardship and in so doing, destroy the people and the countries they are there to protect because of their greed and lust. In the process of imitating and trying to replace God, these covetous and proud and selfish politicians slap the real God in the face and give the people a false sense of security.

“PRESS RELEASE: WASHINGTON, D.C.

The U.S. government announced today that it is changing its emblem to a condom. The President explained that the condom more clearly reflects the government's political stance. A condom stands up to inflation, halts production, destroys the next generation, protects a bunch of pricks, and gives you a sense of security while it's actually screwing you.”

The people were forewarned by God that this would happen, but because they preferred pleasure and hedonism over the truth or God, they allow themselves to be deceived and enslaved. The Apostle Paul, as a matter of fact, vividly described exactly the techniques that our satanic government presently employs and what we should do about it:

“Let no one deceive you by any means; for the Day will not come unless the falling away comes first, and the man of sin is revealed, the son of perdition [Satan], who exalts himself above all that is called God or that is worshipped so that he sits as God in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God. [does this sound like our politicians in their piousness in Washington, D.C.]

“Do you not remember that when I was still with you I told you these things? And now you know what is restraining, that he may be revealed in his own time.

“For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only He [God] who now restrains will do so until He is taken out of the way. And then the lawless one [Satan] will be revealed, whom the Lord will consume with the breath of His mouth and destroy with the brightness of His coming. The coming of the lawless one [Satan] is according to the working of Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders, and with all unrighteous deception among those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they might be saved [don't be one of them!]. And for this reason God will send them strong delusion [from their own government], that they should believe a lie, that they all may be condemned who did not believe the truth but had pleasure in unrighteousness.”
 [2 Thess. 2:3-17, Bible, NKJV]

And keep in mind that the phrase "the love of the truth" means the love of God's law and His word in the Bible and the saving faith that it originates from. Paul again warns us not to either deceive or be deceived in the book of Colossians:

"Do not lie to one another, since you have put off the old man with his deeds, and have put on the new man who is renewed in knowledge according to the image of Him who created him."

[Col. 3:9, Bible, NKJV]

"Beware lest anyone cheat you through philosophy and empty deceit, according to the tradition of men, according to the basic principles of the world, and not according to Christ."

[Col. 2:8, Bible, NKJV]

Psalm 52 in the Bible also describes what will happen to people who disregard Paul's admonition and deceive anyway:

*Why do you boast in evil, O mighty man?
The goodness of God endures continually,
Your tongue devises destruction,
Like a sharp razor, working **deceitfully**.
You love evil more than good,
Lying rather than speaking righteousness,
You love all devouring words,
You deceitful tongue.*

*God shall likewise destroy you forever;
He shall take you away, and pluck you out of your dwelling place,
And uproot you from the land of the living.
The righteous also shall see and fear,
And shall laugh at him, saying,
"Here is the man who did not make God his strength,
But trusted in the abundance of his riches,
And strengthened himself in his wickedness."*

*But I am like a green olive tree in the house of God;
I trust in the mercy of God forever and ever.
I will praise You forever,
Because You have done it;
and in the presence of Your saints
I will wait on Your name, for it is good."
[Psalm 52, Bible, NKJV]*

Why do Americans tolerate deceit from their government? The answer is simple: **They have turned away from God and no longer use their faith in God as the primary arbiter of truth and morality, and this is even true of professed "Christians".** Scientific statistics powerfully confirm this conclusion. George Barna of Barna Research (<http://www.barna.org>) has done a poll of Americans on how they come to conclusions about right and wrong and truth and morality at:

<http://www.barna.org/cgi-bin/PagePressRelease.asp?PressReleaseID=106&Reference=D>

His findings are surprising and you should look at them in order to determine and understand why Americans are so willing to trust and believe a **lying** government. Below is an excerpt from his article:

Americans are Most Likely to Base Truth on Feelings

Americans unanimously denounced the September 11 terrorist attacks as a textbook example of evil, suggesting that there is a foundational belief in an absolute standard of right and wrong. Subsequent research, however, has shown that in the aftermath of the attacks, **a minority of Americans believes in the existence of absolute moral truth**. Even more surprising, the data from a pair of nationwide studies conducted by the Barna Research Group of Ventura, California showed that **less than one out of three born again Christians adopt the notion of absolute moral truth**. The surveys also found that **few Americans turn to their faith as the primary guide for their moral and ethical decisions**.

Truth Is Relative, Say Americans

In two national surveys conducted by Barna Research, one among adults and one among teenagers, people were asked if they believe that there are moral absolutes that are unchanging or that moral truth is relative to the circumstances. **By a 3-to-1 margin (64% vs. 22%) adults said truth is always relative to the person and their situation. The perspective was even more lopsided among teenagers, 83% of whom said moral truth depends on the circumstances, and only 6% of whom said moral truth is absolute.**

The gap between teen and adult views was not surprising, however, when the adult views are considered by generation. While six out of ten people 36 and older embraced moral relativism, 75% of the adults 18 to 35 did so. **Thus, it appears that relativism is gaining ground, largely because relativism appears to have taken root with the generation that preceded today's teens.**

The Barna study also showed that there is a racial component to this issue, as well. Among whites, 60% endorse relativism, compared to 26% who adopt absolutism. Among non-whites, however, 74% support relativism and just 15% believe in absolute morality. (Fifteen percent of Hispanic adults and only 10% of African-American adults contended that moral truth is absolute.)

Not surprisingly, born again Christians were more likely than non-born again individuals to accept moral absolutes. Among adults, 32% of those who were born again said they believe in moral absolutes, compared to just half as many (15%) among the non-born again contingent. Among teenagers, there was still a 2-to-1 ratio evident, but the numbers were much less impressive: **only 9% of born again teens believe in moral absolutes versus 4% of the non-born again teens**.

Moral Decision-Making

The surveys also asked people to indicate the basis on which they make their moral and ethical decisions. Six different approaches were listed by at least 5% of the teenagers interviewed, and eight approaches were listed by at least 5% of adults. In spite of the variety communicated, there was a clear pattern within both groups. **By far the most common basis for moral decision-making was doing whatever feels right or comfortable in a situation**. Nearly four out of ten teens (38%) and three out of ten adults (31%) described that as their primary consideration.

Among adults, other popular means of moral decision-making were on the basis of the values they had learned from their parents (15%), **on the basis of principles taught in the Bible (13%)**, and based on whatever outcome would produce the most personally beneficial results (10%).

Teenagers were slightly different in their approach. One out of six (16%) said they made their choices on the basis of whatever would produce the most beneficial results for them [is it any surprise why we have Enrons with this kind of attitude? Standby for MORE!]. Three alternative foundations were each identified by one out of ten teens: whatever would make the most people happy, whatever they thought their family and friends expected of them, and on the basis of the values taught by their parents. **Just 7% of teenagers said their moral choices were based on biblical principles.**

Once again, the age pattern was evident. **People 36 or older were more than twice as likely as adults in the 18-to-35 age group to identify the Bible as their basis of moral choices (18% vs. 7%). The proportion of young adults who selected the Bible as their primary moral filter was identical to that of teenagers. In contrast, more than half of the young adults (52%) and teenagers (54%) base their moral choices on feelings and beneficial outcomes compared to just one-third of adults 36 and older who do so (32%). [SCARY!]**

The racial pattern was evident on this matter, too. **White adults were nearly three times as likely as non-white adults to base their moral choices on the Bible (17% vs. 6%). Blacks were four times more likely than whites (23% vs. 6%), and Hispanics were more than twice as likely as whites (16% vs. 6%) to base their moral decisions on the potential benefits of their choice.**

What It Means

These figures were cited by George Barna, whose firm conducted the research, as a major reason underlying the data he released in a controversial recent public presentation about the moral views and behaviors of Christians. In that forum, which is now available on videotape from Barna Research ("Morality and the Church"), Barna noted that substantial numbers of Christians believe that activities such as abortion, gay sex, sexual fantasies, cohabitation, drunkenness and viewing pornography are morally acceptable. **"Without some firm and compelling basis for suggesting that such acts are inappropriate, people are left with philosophies such as 'if it feels good, do it,' 'everyone else is doing it' or 'as long as it doesn't hurt anyone else, it's permissible.' In fact, the alarmingly fast decline of moral foundations among our young people has culminated in a one-word worldview: 'whatever.' The result is a mentality that esteems pluralism, relativism, tolerance, and diversity without critical reflection of the implications of particular views and actions."**

Barna emphasized the importance of the data related to the views of teenagers and the born again population. **"Just one out of ten of our country's born again teenagers believe in absolute moral truth - a statistic that is nearly identical to that of non-born again teens. Christian families, educators and churches must prioritize this matter if the Christian community hopes to have any distinctiveness in our culture. The virtual disappearance of this cornerstone of the Christian faith - that is, God has communicated a series of moral principles in the Bible that are meant to be the basis of our thoughts and actions, regardless of our preferences, feelings or situations - is probably the best indicator of the waning strength of the Christian Church in America today."**

The researcher stated that the difference in truth views between born again and non-born again adults was statistically significant, but not much to cheer about. **"When a majority of Christian adults, including three out of four born again Baby Busters, as well as three out of four born again teens proudly cast their vote for moral relativism, the Church is in trouble. Continuing to preach more sermons, teach more Sunday school classes and enroll more people in Bible study groups won't solve the problem since most of these people don't accept the basis of the principles being taught in those venues. The failure to address this issue at its root, and to do so quickly and**

persuasively, will undermine the strength of the church for at least another generation, and probably longer."

Barna also reported that compared to a similar study his firm conducted a decade ago, the basis of people's moral and ethical decisions these days is more likely to be feelings and less likely to be the Bible.

The above very disturbing research simply confirms that the faith and convictions of Christians, much less Americans, toward God have gone sour. *Christians have sold out to a corrupted culture and a corrupted world, and the sincere ones who rely on God's word are dying out as the statistics show.* They are no longer "sanctified" and set apart by their faith (see John 17:13-19) and simply go to church for entertainment and convenience and **vanity**. Their prosperity has corrupted them and their churches have become social clubs and mutual admiration societies instead of being the salt and light of the world to bring the Lord's truth and justice and mercy. They are therefore heading for HELL and have become disobedient to God's commandments:

"Woe to the rebellious children," says the Lord, "Who take counsel, but not of Me, and who devise plans, but not of My Spirit, that they may add sin to sin; who walk to go down to Egypt, and have not asked My advice, to strengthen themselves in the strength of Pharaoh, and to trust in the shadow of Egypt! Therefore the strength of Pharaoh shall be your shame, and trust in the shadow of Egypt shall be your humiliation..."

*Now go, write it before them on a tablet, and note it on a scroll, that it may be for time to come, forever and ever: that this is a rebellious people, **lying children, children who will not hear the law of the Lord**; who say to the seers, "Do not see," and to the prophets, "Do not prophesy to us right things" **Speak to us smooth [politically correct] things**, prophesy deceits. Get out of the way, turn aside from the path, cause the Holy One of Israel to cease from before us."*

Therefore thus says the Holy One of Israel:

"Because you despise this word, and trust in oppression and perversity, and rely on them, therefore this iniquity shall be to you like a breach ready to fall, a bulge in a high wall, whose breaking comes suddenly, in an instant. And He shall break it like the breaking of the potter's vessel, which is broken in pieces; He shall not spare. So there shall not be found among its fragments a shard to take fire from the hearth, or to take water from the cistern."

[Isaiah 30:1-3, 8-14, Bible, NKJV]

But the Lord has a much higher calling for us all:

"If you love me, keep My commandments. And I will pray the Father, and He will give you another Helper, that He may abide with you forever—**the Spirit of truth**, whom the world cannot receive, because it neither sees Him nor knows Him; but you know Him, for He dwells with you and will be in you."

[John 14:15-17, Bible, NKJV]

Barna's research explains where we must begin if we are to fix our corrupted culture and reform our churches to put them back on track. **We can't fix our government until we fix ourselves because the government is US since we are the sovereigns!**

"We have met the enemy, and he is US!"

Don't go pointing the finger at our government until you have your OWN act together first, or you will be despised as a hypocrite and railroaded in front of juries and judges by the government's wicked lawyers. This very brand of state-sponsored terrorism is precisely how our government keeps the sheep in line and enslaved to the income tax, as a matter of fact.

Americans no longer trust God as the absolute, unquestioned, and exclusive source of all moral truth, but instead prefer to vainly trust their "feelings", "science", a so-called heathen "expert", or their idolatrous government above and beyond their God. This violates the first commandment revealed by Jesus in Matt. 22:36-38 and also the following scripture:

*"Trust in the Lord with all your heart, And lean not on your own understanding [or your own feelings]; In all your ways acknowledge Him [not just in the ways that FEEL good or are politically correct], and He [not the winds of public opinion] shall direct your paths."
[Prov. 3:5, Bible, NKJV]*

If you want to know what God does to idolaters who are like the majority of Americans today that Barna described above, then read the books of Ezekial and Judges to get some fear and respect for God. This may not be a message that most people want to hear, but it is at the heart of why God gave us a deceitful government and why we are being punished for our unbelief: we are reaping what we sowed.⁹⁵ The book of Judges especially shows what happens to a culture that trusts in man and the flesh and their own feelings rather than in God for their sense of morality. Below is an excerpt from our bible introducing the Book of Judges to make the moral lessons contained in the book crystal clear:

*The Book of Judges stands in stark contrast to Joshua. In Joshua an obedient people conquered the land through trust in the power of God. **In Judges, however, a disobedient and idolatrous people are defeated time and time again because of their rebellion against God.***

*In seven distinct cycles of sin to salvation, Judges shows how Israel had set aside God's law and in its place substituted "what was right in his own eyes" (21:25). **The recurring result of abandonment from God's law is corruption from within and oppression from without.** During the nearly four centuries spanned by this book, God raises up military champions to throw off the yoke of bondage and to restore the nation to pure worship. But all too soon the "sin cycle" begins again as the nation's spiritual temperance grows steadily colder.*

...

The Book of Judges could also appropriately be titled "The Book of Failure."

***Deterioration** (1:1-3:4). Judges begins with short-lived military successes after Joshua's death, but quickly turns to the repeated failure of all the tribes to drive out their enemies. The people feel the lack of a unified central leader, but the primary reasons for their failure are a lack of faith in God and lack of obedience to Him (2:1-2). Compromise leads to conflict and chaos. Israel does not drive out the inhabitants (1:21, 27, 29, 30); instead of removing the moral cancer [IRS, Federal Reserve?] spread by the inhabitants of Canaan, they contract the disease. The Canaanite gods [money, sex, covetousness] literally become a snare to them (2:3). Judges 2:11-23 is a microcosm of the pattern found in Judges 3-16.*

⁹⁵ See Gal. 6:7, which says: "Do not be deceived, God is not mocked; for whatever a man sows, that he will also reap."

Deliverance (3:5-16:31). In verses 3:5 through 16:31 of the Book of Judges, seven apostasies (fallings away from God) are described, seven servitudes, and seven deliverances. **Each of the seven cycles has five steps: sin, servitude, supplication, salvation, and silence. These also can be described by the words rebellion, retribution, repentance, restoration, and rest. The seven cycles connect together as a descending spiral of sin (2:19).** Israel vacillates between obedience and apostasy as the people continually fail to learn from their mistakes. Apostasy grows, but the rebellion is not continual. The times of rest and peace are longer than the times of bondage. The monotony of Israel's sins can be contrasted with the creativity of God's methods of deliverance.

Depravity (17:1-21:25). Judges 17:1 through 21:25 illustrate (1) religious apostasy (17 and 18) and (2) social and moral depravity (19-21) during the period of the judges. Chapters 19-21 contain one of the worst tales of degradation in the Bible. **Judges closes with a key to understanding the period: "everyone did what was right in his own eyes" (21:25) [a.k.a. "what FEELS good"].** The people are not doing what is wrong in their own eyes, but what is "evil in the sight of the Lord" (2:11).

Just like the depravity and corruption that happened to the Israelites in the Book of Judges because of relying on their own desires instead of God's commands as their guide, the price for the vain sin of moral relativism that Barna describes happening right here in America as we speak will be eventual deception and damnation for many.

"The coming of the lawless one is according to the working of Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders, and with all unrighteous deception among those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth [God's truth], that they might be saved.

And for this reason God will send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie, that they all may be condemned who did not believe the truth but had pleasure in unrighteousness."

[2 Thess. 2:9-12, Bible, NKJV]

Unless God is the foundation of **all** truth and unless He is our absolute source of truth and our moral compass in **everything** we do, then this country is doomed to believe the BIG LIE mentioned earlier in 2 Thess. 2:3-17. Recall that here is what God said on this subject:

"I am the way, the [only moral] Truth, and the life. No one comes to the father but by me."

[John 14:6, Bible, NKJV]

Finally, let us not forget the words of our beloved founder George Washington on this subject in his Farewell Address:

Of all the dispositions and habits which lead to political prosperity, religion and morality are indispensable supports. In vain would that man claim the tribute of patriotism who should labor to subvert these great pillars of human happiness—these firmest props of the duties of men and citizens. The mere politician, equally with the pious man, ought to respect and to cherish them. A volume could not trace all their connections with private and public felicity. Let it simply be asked, "where is the security for property, for reputation, for life, if the sense of religious obligation desert the oaths which are the instruments of investigation in courts of justice?" And let us with caution indulge the supposition that morality can be maintained without religion. Whatever may be conceded to the influence of refined education on minds of peculiar structure, reason

and experience both forbid us to expect that national morality can prevail in exclusion of religious principle.

It is substantially true that virtue or morality is a necessary spring of popular government. The rule indeed extends with more or less force to every species of free government. Who that is a sincere friend to it can look with indifference upon attempts to shake the foundation of the fabric?

Promote, then, as an object of primary importance, institutions for the general diffusion of knowledge. In proportion as the structure of a government gives force to public opinion, it is essential that public opinion should be enlightened.

There can be no religion and morality without absolute truth, and God is the only source of moral truth. Wake up, people!

Diligent followers of Christ who have taken the time to read and study the law and the truth of God will recognize the government deception and obfuscation for what it is and will publicly expose and condemn it. They will also take the time to reveal the results of their discovery to the public and the mass media as we have done here so that such harmful untruths do not spread like a cancer and destroy our society and our freedoms:

“Be diligent to present yourself approved to God, a worker who does not need to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. But shun profane babblings for they will increase to more ungodliness. And their message will spread like cancer.” [2 Tim. 2:15-17, Bible, NKJV]

7.12.2 Presumption

*“The greatest enemy of the truth is very often not the lie - deliberate, contrived and dishonest - but the myth - persistent, persuasive and unrealistic.”
[President John F. Kennedy, at Yale University on June 11, 1962]*

The purpose of lying is to develop in the hearts and minds of the hearers a false presumption. The more ignorant and unwise and godless the hearers, the more likely they are to believe this false presumption. Those who promote such lies will do so for selfish reasons but ultimately their purposes are harmful and hateful.

*“A lying tongue hates those who are crushed by it, and a flattering mouth works ruin.”
[Prov. 26:28, Bible, NKJV]*

Most frequently, we also acquire false presumptions by less dishonest or more casual means. For instance, we acquire false presumptions mainly from the media and our associates in our normal interactions. This method is the most popular technique used by our government to brainwash the sheeple, I mean people. When our government does it, it is called “propaganda”. The reason more informal techniques such as this are most successful is that we just accept what people say without thinking critically about it and without questioning it. We are among people and organizations that we supposedly love or trust and so our intellectual defenses are down. In effect, we are intellectually lazy and don’t bother to process or analyze or question new ideas or look what God’s word says about them before we commit them to our memory banks as truth.

Another very popular propaganda tool for creating false presumptions are the public schools which are run by our government. Good parents will take the time to counteract the myths and false presumptions that liberal teachers will try to program our children with, but Satan still gets his foot in the door because many children grow up in single parent families where the one parent who is present doesn't have the energy to counteract the government brainwashing on a regular basis.

The Bible has some very convicting things to say about presumption that every Christian ought to teach their children, and which should also be part of the jury instructions that every jury hears:

*“Who can understand his errors? Cleanse me from secret faults. **Keep back Your servant also from presumptuous sins; Let them not have dominion over me. Then I shall be blameless, and I shall be innocent of great transgression.**”*
[Psalm 19:12-13, Bible, NKJV]

Evidently, being presumptuous is a sin for which God takes offense. Our King James Bible has a footnote under the above passage that says: “The right response to God’s revelation is to pray for His help with errors, faults, and sins.” That same passage above under the word “presumptuous” then points to Num. 15:30, which tells the rest of the very telling story on this subject:

*“But **the person who does anything presumptuously, whether he is native-born or a stranger, that one brings reproach on the Lord, and he shall be cut off from among his people.**”*
[Numbers 15:30, Bible, NKJV]

So evidently, we’re dealing with very serious sin here. Presumption evidently is a very big offense to the Lord. If you further research the meaning of “presumptuous”, you will find in Numbers 14:44 that it means defiance and disobedience to God’s laws, the Bible, His commandments, and His will revealed to us by the Holy Spirit, and through His prophets.

The bedrock of our system of jurisprudence is the fundamental presumption of “innocent until proven guilty beyond a reasonable doubt”. The Fifth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution then guarantees us a right of due process of law. Fundamental to the notion of due process of law is the absence of presumption of fact or law. Absolutely everything that is offered as proof or evidence of guilt must be demonstrated and revealed with evidence, and nothing can or should be based on presumption, or especially false presumption. **The extent to which presumption is used to establish guilt is the extent to which our due process rights have been violated.** Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, on page 500 under the term “due process” confirms these conclusions:

*“If any question of fact or liability be conclusively **be presumed** [rather than proven] against him, this is **not** due process of law.”*
[Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 500 under “due process”]

In our legal system, our government goes out of its way to create and perpetuate false presumptions to bias the legal system in their favor, and in so doing, based on the above, they commit a grave sin and violation of God’s laws. The only reason they get away with this tyranny in most cases is because of our own legal ignorance along with corrupted government judges and lawyers who allow and encourage and facilitate this kind of abuse of our due process rights. Below are some examples of how they do this:

1. IRS authority to make assessments or to change your self-assessment presumptions. Because our income tax system is based on voluntary self assessment and payment, according to the Supreme

Court in *Flora v. United States*, [362 U.S. 145](#) (1959), then the only person who can assess you, a natural person, with a liability under Subtitle A of the Internal Revenue Code is YOU and only YOU and the only person who can file a return with your name on it is you. The IRS' own Internal Revenue Manual, in section [5.1.11.9](#) clearly shows that Substitute For Returns (SFRs), which are returns filed in place of those which "taxpayers" refuse to file, cannot be filed for any specie of 1040 forms (1040, 1040A, 1040EZ, etc) and the reason is because the tax is voluntary, which is to say more properly that it is a DONATION and not a TAX. Once you make this "assessment" as authorized by [26 U.S.C. §6201\(a\)\(1\)](#) and send it in, the IRS has no lawful authority to change or adjust the assessment, even if they believe you made an error, without your permission! You can search for implementing regulations under 26 CFR 1.X until the cows come home and you won't find a regulation that authorizes them to change your self assessment! Your average misinformed American, however, naturally "assumes" that the IRS has the authority to change it whether you want to or not. If the IRS then finds that you did make an error, they will "presume" that they have the lawful authority to change it by typically sending back a revised assessment and give you a certain amount of time to respond or protest it before it becomes cast in stone. When they do this, they are basically asking you for permission to make the change, and your silence or acquiescence constitutes implied consent to the change. This whole scheme works in the IRS' favor because of the ignorance of the average American about what the law really says. It seems that too many people have been relying on IRS publications rather than reading the law for themselves. BUT, you can shift this contemptible situation completely around the other way in your favor by knowing the law! All you have to do is attach to your return specific instructions stating specifically and clearly that the IRS:

- May NOT change or especially increase the amount of "income" on the return without invalidating EVERYTHING on the return and causing you to withdraw your consent. This makes the return to be filed under duress and inadmissible as evidence in court according to the Supreme Court in *Weeks v. United States*, 232 U.S. 383 (1914).
- May not rely on hearsay evidence of receipt of funds from employers in the form of W-2 or 1099 forms, because they are not authenticated with a notary affidavit.
- May not file a Substitute for Return (SFR) in place of your return because there is no statute or implementing regulation authorizing it and section [5.1.11.9](#) of the Internal Revenue Manual does not allow it either.
- Should not assume that the form or ANY information on it is *accurate* if the form IN TOTAL is not accurate and acceptable AS SUBMITTED.
- Is not authorized to "propose" any changes, only to file the return IN TOTAL in your administrative record and send you a letter explaining what they disagree with and the authorities (statutes and regulations and IRM sections and Supreme Court rulings) their determination is based on.
- If they protest the amount of "income" on the return, must provide a definition of "income" that is consistent with the following web address and with the Constitutional definition made by the Supreme Court:
<http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/CitesByTopic/income.htm>
- Any protests or disagreements they make **must** include a cite of the specific statutes AND implementing regulations AND the section from the Internal Revenue Manual which document and authorize their position or their position will be will presumed in the absence of evidence to the contrary to be illegal, unlawful, not authorized by law, null and void, and *frivolous*.
- May not cite any court case below the Supreme Court as justification for their position, based on the content of their own [Internal Revenue Manual, section 4.10.7.2.9.8](#).
- May not institute penalties because they violate the prohibition on Bills of Attainder under Article 1, Section 9, Clause 3 of the Constitution and because such penalties can only apply to employees of a corporation per 26 CFR 301.6671-1(b), which you are not until proven otherwise, with EVIDENCE.

If you use the above tactics and file a return with a 1 cent "income" and ask for all your money back, that along with the above tactics will drive the average IRS agent bonkers and he simply won't know what to do and he will have no choice but to give you your ALL your withheld tax back!

2. Presumption of correctness of IRS assessments. The federal courts assume that the IRS' assessments are correct, but the IRS must provide facts to support the assessment and it must appear on a 23C assessment form that is signed and certified by an assessment officer.

“The tax collector’s presumption of correctness has a herculean masculinity of Goliathlike reach, but we strike an Achilles’ heel when we find no muscles, no tendons, no ligaments of fact.”

[Portillo v. C.I.R., 932 F.2d 1128 (5th Cir. 1991)]

“Presumption of correctness which attends determination of Commissioner of Internal Revenue may be rebutted by showing that such determination is arbitrary or erroneous.”

[United States v. Hover, 268 F.2d 657 (1959)]

However, the presumption of correctness is easily overcome by looking at the government's own audits of the IRS. We have several documents on our website from the General Accounting Office (GAO) showing that the IRS is unable to properly account for its revenues or protect the security of its taxpayer records. Presenting these reports in court is a sure way to derail the presumption of correctness of any alleged assessment the IRS may say they have on you. You can examine these reports for yourself on our website at:

<http://famguardian.org/PublishedAuthors/Govt/GAO/GAO.htm>

3. Legitimate authority presumptions: When an IRS agent or investigator contacts someone to investigate a tax matter, the average Joe sixpack citizen “presumes” that they have authority to do what they are doing. After all, the agent will pull out a rather official looking “pocket commission” that makes it look like they are official. However, in most cases this pocket commission is issued to administrative IRS employees who have no business whatsoever doing any kind of enforcement actions such as investigations, seizures, liens, and levies. Such Administrative pocket commissions will be red in color rather than the serial number on the administrative pocket commission, for instance, will begin with the letter “A”, indicating that they are Administrative rather than “E”, which means Enforcement and the badge will be red instead of black (black is the color for Enforcement commissions). Whenever you talk with an IRS agent in person or on the phone, demand to see their pocket commission and get the serial number of their pocket commission for your records so you can sue the bastard if he illegally institutes collection actions in violation of 26 U.S.C. §7433 and 26 U.S.C. §7214. When they appear or call for questions, tell them you are really glad to see them and say that you will be cooperating fully with them AFTER they answer your questions first which will prove they have authority to be doing what they are doing. This amounts to a conditional acceptance and it will be very hard for them to argue with you. This is the way that you can “question authority” if you have an IRS agent breathing down your neck. Then when they start answering your questions about their authority to investigate, grill them on camera or using a tape recorder with witnesses present in the room using the IRS Deposition questions on our website at:

<http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Forms/Discovery/Deposition/Deposition.htm>

4. Court jurisdiction presumptions. If you appear in front of a federal court that has no jurisdiction over you and you make a general appearance and do not challenge jurisdiction, you are “presumed” to voluntarily consent to the jurisdiction of the court, even though that court in most cases doesn't have any jurisdiction whatsoever over you, including in personam or subject matter jurisdiction.

Your ignorant and/or greedy attorney won't even tell you that you have the option to make a *special* appearance instead of a general appearance or to challenge jurisdiction because it would threaten his profits and maybe even his license to practice law. You have to know this, and what you don't know will definitely hurt you! However, even some federal courts admit the real truth of this matter:

“There is a presumption against existence of federal jurisdiction; thus, party invoking federal court’s jurisdiction bears the burden of proof. 28 U.S.C.A. §§ 1332, 1332(c); Fed.Rules.Civ.Proc. rule 12(h)(3), 28 U.S.C.A.”

“If parties do not raise question of lack of jurisdiction, it is the duty of the federal court to determine the matter sua sponte. 28 U.S.C.A. §1332.”

“Lack of jurisdiction cannot be waived and jurisdiction cannot be conferred upon a federal court by consent, inaction, or stipulation. 28 U.S.C.A. §1332.”

“Although defendant did not present evidence to support dismissal for lack of jurisdiction, burden rested with plaintiffs to prove affirmatively that jurisdiction did exist. 28 U.S.C.A. §1332.”

[Basso v. Utah Power and Light Company, 495 F.2d 906 (1974)]

5. U.S. Supreme Court “cert denied” presumptions. We talk about this scandal in detail later in section 6.2.1 where we talk about the Certiorari Act of 1925. When a case is lost at the federal district or circuit court level, frequently it is appealed to the U.S. Supreme Court on what is called a “writ of certiorari”. When the Supreme Court doesn't want to hear the case, they will “deny the cert”, which is often abbreviated “cert denied”. A famous and evil and unethical tactic by the IRS and DOJ is to cite as an authority a “cert denied” and then “presume” or “assume” that because the Supreme Court wouldn't hear the appeal, then they agree with the findings of the lower court. An example of that tactic is found in the IRS' famous document on their website entitled *The Truth About Fivolous Tax Arguments*, for instance, which we rebutted on our website at: http://famguardian.org/PublishedAuthors/Govt/IRS/friv_tax_rebuts.pdf. However, this falacious logic simply is *not* a valid *presumption* or inference to make absent a detailed explanation from the Supreme Court court *itself* of why they denied the cert, and frequently they won't explain why they denied the appeal because it would be a public embarrassment for the government to do so! For instance, if a person declares themselves to be a “nontaxpayer” and a “nonresident alien”, does not file a return, and challenges the authority of the IRS and litigates his case all the way up to the Supreme Court to prove that the IRS has no assessment authority on him, do you think the Supreme Court is going to want most Americans to hear the truth by ruling in his favor and causing our income tax system to self-destruct? Rule 10 of the U.S. Supreme Court reveals *some*, but not *all* of the reasons why they might deny a cert., but there are a lot more reasons they don't list, and the rule even admits that the reasons listed are incomplete. The bold-faced type emphasizes the point we are trying to make here:

Rule 10. Considerations Governing Review on Writ of Certiorari

*Review on a writ of certiorari is not a matter of right, but of judicial discretion. A petition for a writ of certiorari will be granted only for compelling reasons. The following, **although neither controlling nor fully measuring the Court's discretion**, indicate the character of the reasons the Court considers:*

- (a) *a United States court of appeals has entered a decision in conflict with the decision of another United States court of appeals on the same important*

matter; has decided an important federal question in a way that conflicts with a decision by a state court of last resort; or has so far departed from the accepted and usual course of judicial proceedings, or sanctioned such a departure by a lower court, as to call for an exercise of this Court's supervisory power;

(b) a state court of last resort has decided an important federal question in a way that conflicts with the decision of another state court of last resort or of a United States court of appeals;

(c) a state court or a United States court of appeals has decided an important question of federal law that has not been, but should be, settled by this Court, or has decided an important federal question in a way that conflicts with relevant decisions of this Court.

A petition for a writ of certiorari is rarely granted when the asserted error consists of erroneous factual findings or the misapplication of a properly stated rule of law.

In the above, DISCRETION=REASON. The above list of reasons, by the court's own admission, is *incomplete*. Furthermore, there is no Supreme Court rule that says they have to list ALL their reasons for not granting a writ. This very defect, in fact, is how the government has transformed us into a society of men and no laws, in conflict with the intent of the founding fathers expressed in *Marbury v. Madison*, 5 U.S. 137 (1803):

"The Government of the United States has been emphatically termed a government of laws, and not of men. It will certainly cease to deserve this high appellation if the laws furnish no remedy for the violation of a vested legal right."
[Marbury v. Madison, 5 U.S. 137 (1803)]

So don't let the IRS trick you into "assuming" that the supreme court agreed with them if an appeal was denied to it from a lower court that was ruled in the IRS' favor. The lower courts are obligated to follow the precedents established by the Supreme Court but frequently they don't. Rulings against gun ownership and the pledge of allegiance in 2002 coming from the radical and socialist Ninth Circuit Court of Appeals are good examples that contradict such a conclusion.

6. **"U.S. citizen" presumptions.** There is a very common misconception that we are all "U.S. citizens". In most cases, judges will insist that the only way that you cannot be one is if you meet the burden of proving that you *aren't*. This presumption is *completely false* and is undertaken to illegally pull you inside the corrupt jurisdiction of the federal courts in order to rape and pillage your liberty and your property.

*"Unless the defendant can prove he is **not** a citizen of the United States, the IRS has the right to inquire and determine a tax liability."*
[U.S. v. Slater, 545 Fed. Supp. 179,182 (1982).]

7. **Social Security Number presumptions.** The Treasury Regulations in 26 CFR contain a presumption that if you have a Socialist Security Number, then you must be a "U.S. citizen":

[26 CFR § 301.6109-1\(g\)](#)

*(g) Special rules for taxpayer identifying numbers issued to foreign persons--(1) General rule--(i) Social security number. **A social security number is generally identified in the records and database of the Internal Revenue Service as a number belonging to a U.S. citizen or resident alien individual.** A person may establish a different status for the number by providing proof of foreign status with the Internal Revenue Service under such*

procedures as the Internal Revenue Service shall prescribe, including the use of a form as the Internal Revenue Service may specify. Upon accepting an individual as a nonresident alien individual, the Internal Revenue Service will assign this status to the individual's social security number.

8. “Taxpayer” presumptions. The IRS refers to everyone as “taxpayers”, creating a false presumption on everyone’s part that we indeed are. There is no statute making anyone liable for paying Subtitle A income taxes and without a liability statute, then no one is “subject to” that part of the Internal Revenue Code unless they volunteer to be. The only person who can lawfully identify you as a “taxpayer” is you, and that the government has no authority to use this word to describe you without your consent. In most tax trials, the judges or juries will seldom question the determinations of the IRS. Instead, the burden falls on the “taxpayer” to prove that the IRS’ determinations were *incorrect*. Then the IRS will refuse to provide evidence to this alleged “taxpayer” that is needed for him to prove that they are wrong. Here is how the Supreme Court describes this scandal in *Bull v. United States*, 295 U.S. 247 (1935):

Thus, the usual procedure for the recovery of debts is reversed in the field of taxation. Payment precedes defense, and the burden of proof, normally on the claimant, is shifted to the taxpayer.

The [tax] assessment supersedes the pleading, proof, and judgment necessary in an action at law, and has the force of such a judgment. The ordinary defendant stands in judgment only after a hearing. The taxpayer often is afforded his hearing after judgment and after payment, and his only redress for unjust administrative action is the right to claim restitution.⁹⁶

9. Burden of proof presumptions. Our *Great IRS Hoax* book describes a scandal in the Internal Revenue Code, where section 7491 places the burden of proving nonliability on the “taxpayer”. Note that this section of the code never requires the government to first prove that a natural person is a “taxpayer” BEFORE the burden of proof is shifted to the taxpayer. Here is the content of that section:

If, in any court proceeding, a taxpayer introduces credible evidence with respect to any factual issue relevant to ascertaining the liability of the taxpayer for any tax imposed by subtitle A or B, the Secretary shall have the burden of proof with respect to such issue.

10. Consent for withholding of Social Security Taxes presumption. If one is hired on to work for the government, then under [5 U.S.C. §8422](#), they are “deemed” to consent to the withholding of Social Security and Medicare and are never even asked whether they want to do so. Use of the word “deemed” is legalese for “presumed”. Below is the content of that section:

[5 U.S.C. §8422](#) *Deductions of OASDI for Federal Employees*

(b) Each employee or Member is deemed to consent and agree to the deductions under subsection (a). Notwithstanding any law or regulation affecting the pay of an employee or Member, payment less such deductions is a full and complete discharge and acquittance of all claims and demands for regular services during the period covered by the payment, except the right to any benefits under this subchapter, or under subchapter IV or V of this chapter, based on the service of the employee or Member.

⁹⁶ U.S. v. Bull, 295 U.S. 247, 26 (1935), emphasis added.

11. Government form presumptions. Filling out of most government forms is in most cases completely voluntary and unnecessary. Whenever you submit a government form, you are “presumed” to be in pursuit of a government “privilege” and consent to be bound by all laws of the government that produced that form, even if you would not otherwise be so! For instance, if you submit an IRS form 1040, you are “presumed” to be a “taxpayer” who is “subject to” the Internal Revenue Code, even though if you had not done so, you would not be. The Department of State DS-11 form used for obtaining a U.S. passport has only one block for indicating your citizenship, which contains “U.S. citizen” and NO blocks for specifying that you are a “U.S. national”, creating a presumption that the only thing you can be in order to get a passport is a “U.S. citizen”. The IRS W-8BEN creates a presumption that you are a “beneficial owner”, which is then defined as someone who has to include ALL income as gross income on their tax return, even though the law says this is not required. All of these are major, very serious, and FALSE presumptions that significantly prejudice and abuse your rights. The government only gets away with this type of fraud and abuse because the people filling out the forms don’t question authority or challenge the presumptions on the form. We have successfully overcome most of these presumptions by modifying or redesigning the forms in original print to shift the presumption in our favor before we submit it. The modified forms then slip by inattentive and underpaid government clerks and we can then use this as evidence in our favor. Fight fire with fire!

There are many other similar “presumptions” like those above that we haven’t documented. We include these here only as examples so you can see how the scandal and violation of your rights and liberties is perpetrated by the evil socialist beast called the U.S. government. Whatever the case, the Bible is very explicit about what we should do with those who act presumptuously: *Rebuke and banish them from society*. What does this mean in the case of juries and during court trials? It means that during the voir dire process of interviewing the jurors and the judges, they must both be asked about their presumptions and biases, and those who have such biases and presumptions should be banished from the jury and the case. If the judge has a bias or presumption in favor of the government’s position, such as those listed above, then he too should be removed for conflict of interest under [28 U.S.C. §455](#) and bias and prejudice under [28 U.S.C. §144](#). Likewise, if you ever hear a government prosecutor use the phrase “everyone knows”, then a BIG red flag should go up in your mind’s eye because you are dealing with a presumption. When this happens in a courtroom, you ought to stand up and object to such nonsense immediately because your WICKED opponent is trying to frame you with presumptions and thereby violate your due process rights under the Fifth Amendment!

The reason this book is so large and extensive in its research and authorities is because we have made a disciplined effort to *avoid* presumptions. We have, in fact, used evidence derived from the government’s own laws, spokespersons, and courts to prove nearly every point we make in this book. This ensures that you don’t have to “assume” anything and can examine the facts and evidence for yourself and reach your own independent conclusions about the truth of what we are saying. In effect, we have pretended that we are the prosecuting attorney and you are the jury and the “court” is the “court of public opinion”. This provides excellent practice and preparation for a real trial, because we assume these materials will also be used in a real court to prosecute government wrongdoing.

7.12.3 Illegal Acts and Legal Obfuscation

"[American tax laws] are constantly changing as our elected representatives seek new ways to ensure that whatever tax advice we receive is incorrect." -- Dave Barry

Our system of government is one of delegated powers that are strictly limited under a written Constitution. The original source of all power is the people themselves, according to the Supreme Court.

"When we consider the nature and the theory of our institutions of government, the principles on which they are supposed to rest, and review the history of their development, we are constrained to conclude that they do not mean to leave room for the play and action of purely personal and arbitrary power. Sovereignty itself is, of course, not subject to law, for it is the author and source of law; but in our system, while sovereign powers are delegated to the agencies of government, sovereignty itself remains with the people, by whom and for whom all government exists and acts. And the law is the definition and limitation of power. It is, indeed, quite true that there must always be lodged somewhere, and in some person or body, the authority of final decision; and in many cases of mere administration, the responsibility is purely political, no appeal lying except to the ultimate tribunal of the public judgment, exercised either in the pressure of opinion, or by means of the suffrage. But the fundamental rights to life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness, considered as individual possessions, are secured by those maxims of constitutional law which are the monuments showing the victorious progress of the race in securing to men the blessings of civilization under the reign of just and equal laws, so that, in the famous language of the Massachusetts bill of rights, the government of the commonwealth 'may be a government of laws and not of men.' For the very idea that one man may be compelled to hold his life, or the means of living, or any material right essential to the enjoyment of life, at the mere will of another, seems to be intolerable in any country where freedom prevails, as being the essence of slavery itself." *Yick Wo v. Hopkins*, 118 U.S. 356 (1886)

"There is no such thing as a power of inherent sovereignty in the government of the United States...In this country sovereignty resides in the people, and Congress can exercise no power which they have not, by their Constitution entrusted to it. All else is withheld."
[*Julliard v. Greenman*, 110 U.S. 421 (1884)]

With the above in mind, any act of the federal government or its agents (including its employees, banks and employers acting under the alleged authority or "color" of law as indicated by a government agent) not specifically authorized by the Constitution or by the statutes which implement the Constitution is null, void, illegal, and unlawful. The definition of "illegal" in Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 747 confirms this:

"Illegal. Against or not authorized by law."

The definition of "unlawful" on page 1536 of Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, also confirms the same conclusion:

Unlawful. That which is contrary to, prohibited, or unauthorized by law. That which is not lawful. The acting contrary to, or in defiance of the law; disobeying or disregarding the law. Term is equivalent to "without excuse or justification." *State v. Noble*, 90 N.M. 360, 563 P.2d 1153, 1157. While necessarily not implying the element of criminality, it is broad enough to include it.

Most Americans incorrectly believe that the acts of a government official are not criminal or illegal unless they VIOLATE a specific law that prohibits that behavior. We now know based on the above that this is yet another lie and myth that our government-run and deficient public education system

taught us as we were growing up. **In fact, any government servant who attempts an act or makes a request which the Constitution or statutes does not SPECIFICALLY AUTHORIZE in writing has committed a crime and can be fired from office for malfeasance and breaking the law if their actions injure the rights of others!** This is the very essence of having a society of laws and not of men as the supreme Court mentions above!

Why don't more government "servants" get fired for doing this? The main reason is that judges are corrupt and run a "mafia protection racket" for the wrongdoing of their coworkers in other agencies of their government employer. This is perpetuated by three different conflicts of interest in direct violation of [28 U.S.C. §455](#):

- In most cases, they pay federal income taxes, and could be audited or threatened by the IRS if they rule against the IRS.
- Their paycheck comes from income taxes, and would probably be reduced if they didn't assist the IRS in the extortion that it imposes on the average American.
- If they do convict or penalize their fellow federal workers, they could be removed from office by the very same legislators who approved their appointment to the bench to begin with. See section 11.4 for information on how judge get appointed, for instance.

In order to oppose this kind of tyranny, we must first understand how it is perpetrated. It is quite common for tyrannical public servants to try to exceed their authority by trying to:

- Fool third parties, such as employers, into committing acts as their agents by telling them that the law says they are supposed to do things that they in fact are not obligated to do. For instance, the IRS fools private employers into using W-4 forms that technically only apply to federal employers. They also fool private banks into thinking that they must report currency transactions in excess of \$3,000 when in fact only banks in federal receivership and on federal land must do so. If prosecuted for such a crime, they will try to blame the agent who was acting in their behalf in order to evade liability. The courts encourage this kind of abuse by refusing to hold federal employees individually liable for giving false information or advice.
- Writing ambiguous laws which the average man cannot understand without the aid of a lawyer. This makes them subjective to enforce, arbitrary, and a tool of arbitrary abuse of the populace. Ayn Rand in her book *Atlas Shrugged* provides a very good explanation of this kind of trickery:

"Did you really think that we want those laws to be observed?" said Dr. Ferris. "We want them broken. You'd better get it straight that it's not a bunch of boy scouts you're up against - then you'll know that this is not the age for beautiful gestures. We're after power and we mean it. You fellows were pikers, but we know the real trick, and you'd better get wise to it. There's no way to rule innocent men. The only power any government has is the power to crack down on criminals. Well, when there aren't enough criminals, one makes them. One declares so many things to be a crime that it becomes impossible for men to live without breaking laws. Who wants a nation of law-abiding citizens? What's there in that for anyone? But just pass the kind of laws that can neither be observed nor enforced nor objectively interpreted - and you create a nation of law-breakers - and then you cash in on guilt. Now, that's the system, Mr. Rearden, that's the game, and once you understand it, you'll be much easier to deal with."
[Atlas Shrugged, Ayn Rand, page 411 of the 35th Anniversary Edition]

- Undermine the integrity of the public education system by eliminating or weakening curricula about sovereignty, citizenship, Constitutional and legal issues in the public schools so that the average American isn't able to challenge their authority or defend himself in court without the

aid of a lawyer. Eliminating prayer, God, and religious studies from schools and keeping students distracted with promiscuous sex, handing out birth control pills, and letting them get abortions without parental notification also helps kids be bad citizens that can easily be manipulated by the government because of their ignorance.

Whatever techniques our deceitful and covetous government might use to hide the truth contained in the law or to manipulate public opinion and courtroom results, those who read and know and love the law of God simply cannot be deceived. They know that:

“He that turneth away his ear from hearing the law, even his prayer [shall be] abomination.” Proverbs 28:9:

7.12.4 Propaganda and Political Warfare

“The king establishes the land by justice, but he who receives bribes overthrows it.” [Prov. 29:4, Bible, NKJV]

Propaganda is a vehicle for deception, and political warfare is the tool used to ostracize and punish those who refuse to think and act the way the covetous government wants them to act. Under such circumstances, our government transforms itself into the thought police, and mercilessly punishes all those who dare to be “politically incorrect” using the media and other clandestine and indirect means.

Once our government obfuscates the laws to disguise their lack of jurisdiction to impose an income tax, they then must erect a propaganda machine to perpetuate the false presumption and myth that the tax laws really do create this false fiction of law in the minds of average Americans. For this, they resort to the same propaganda tactics as the *communists*, and for that, they should be called communists. The end result they seek through such propaganda is the ability to act under the “color or law” to further their selfish interest without the ignorant and misinformed public knowing that they are in fact acting without lawful authority. They use the media to create an illusion that the laws say they are authorized to do that which they are doing and also confuse people about what it means to say something is “illegal” or “unlawful”, as we point out in the previous section. In order for the propaganda campaign to be successful, the following insidious elements must exist:

- Young minds in the schools must be inculcated to “assume” that there is a liability to pay taxes. The American Bar Association (ABA) travels around the country hand-in-hand visiting schools to propagandize impressionable minds absent opposition like the pied piper, and handing out CD-ROMs that make it easy for high school students just starting their first job to “comply” with the tax laws. Do you think they are telling these young minds the truth that the income tax in fact isn’t even a tax, but a donation program?
- Through decades of amendments and complicated exceptions to the tax code, and legal obfuscation, the law is then rendered so complicated and voluminous that so-called “experts” and specialized computer programs must be relied upon by the average American to understand what the law requires of them.
- The government must then structure the professions of these “experts” to bring them under their control through licensing and regulation under the pretenses of “public protection”...what a joke! For instance, the IRS has an “Enrolled Agent Program” in which tax professions who meet their mandatory criterias and do everything the IRS insists that they do, are given special privileges and preferential treatment. More “privilege-induced slavery and tyranny”. If you aren’t an “Enrolled agent” trying to help someone else out as a tax professional, they won’t even talk to you!
- The government then coddles these professionals with propaganda materials such as fraudulent IRS publications, to program them into falsely believing that a liability exists. They subsidize the education of these professionals,

attend their propaganda sessions, I mean conferences, and go after the dissidents who leak out the truth to keep the truth from coming out.

- If the “experts” get out of line, the government then pulls the license of the “expert” in order to punish them for dissent.

Does the above sound like liberal socialists and [communists](#) have infiltrated our educational and legal professions? That is exactly the way that it appears to us. In addition to the above techniques, more subtle and insidious methods are also used to fight the dissidents of this state-endorsed legal slavery. These techniques collectively are called “psyops”, or “political warfare”. Our government can’t openly instigate physical violence against the populace to terrorize the dissident sheep into “volunteering” for the government slavery called income tax. Therefore, greedy politicians intent on perpetuating and expanding their power will resort to the same kinds of tactics the Communists used in the former Soviet Union against their dissenters, including some combination of the following methods:

1. **Media propaganda, including lies and distortions of the truth to accomplish political ends.** For instance, see:
 - 1.1. Department of Justice (DOJ) Press Releases: http://www.ustreas.gov/irs/ci/tax_fraud/2002hearings/doj_releases.htm
 - 1.2. Tax Scam Hearings held annually by the Senate Finance Committee in April: <http://www.senate.gov/~finance/fin-comm.htm>. In April 2002, the Senate Finance Committee hauled a chain-bound political tax prisoner in front of the camera to scare the sheep into submission.
2. **Government literature and communications propaganda**
 - 2.1. IRS publications incorrectly describe and portray the legal tax liabilities of the average American. This leads amounts to a constructive fraud. The courts then refuse to hold the government collectively responsible for the incorrect content of these publications.
 - 2.2. The IRS telephone support 800 number routinely gives incorrect advice about the true requirements of our tax laws and creates a false presumption on the part of Americans calling in that they are “liable” for income taxes when in fact they are not. The federal courts absolutely refuse to hold individuals who render such advice liable for their fraudulent and deceptive portrayal of what the law requires.
3. **Verbal abuse**
 - 3.1. Anyone who has been late paying their taxes has seen the kinds of verbally abusive, anonymous, threatening letters and correspondence the IRS sends out.
 - 3.2. If you call up the IRS 800 number or visit a local IRS agent and say that you are not a “U.S. citizen”, they will frequently verbally abuse you and call you a derelict for not paying your “fair share”, even though the law defines what your fair share is and it says you owe NOTHING. When you turn it around and say that they want more than their fair share, they will hang up on you.
4. **Persecution of dissenters**
 - 4.1. Persons protesting illegal government taxes (called “Illegal Tax Protesters”) are regularly harassed, threatened, and intimidated by the DOJ and the IRS. They are frightened with frivolous charges of Willful Failure to File ([26 U.S.C. §7203](#)), Tax Evasion ([26 U.S.C. §7201](#)), and Obstruction of Justice ([18 U.S.C. Chapter 73](#)) because of their uncooperativeness, even though the Department of Justice’s own [U.S. Attorney Manual, section 9-4.139](#) clearly states that no federal agency has investigative jurisdiction for these alleged crimes. The reason is clearly because [26 U.S.C. §7805](#) empowers the Secretary of the Treasury to write needful implementing regulations to enforce these alleged crimes but he has never done so, and without regulations applying these statutes to specific taxes and situations, these statutes are unenforceable.
 - 4.2. Individuals who market sovereignty methods such as trusts, offshore bank accounts, etc. are routinely illegally raided by the Department of Justice with an insufficient and or nonexistent warrant for an area outside of the territorial jurisdiction of the federal government for acts that aren’t crimes, because there aren’t any implementing regulations for any of the tax crimes found in [26 U.S.C. §7201-7206](#). Judges hush-hush this and sanction persecuted individuals for daring to challenge the jurisdiction of the IRS or the DOJ to institute such violence against the rights of sovereign Americans.
 - 4.3. Evidence illegally obtained during illegal raids above is then used to go on a fishing expedition to dredge up incriminating evidence or even falsify evidence, and corrupt federal judges then allow such illegally obtained or manipulated evidence to be admitted into evidence, in spite of the fact that the U.S. Supreme Court has repeatedly

ruled that such evidence cannot be used⁹⁷. This was the tactic used against Lynne Meredith in 2002, who marketed trusts and detaxing packages. The IRS raided her premises illegally in 1999, and used the evidence illegally obtained in the raid to indict her in 2002.

5. **Military intimidation**

- 5.1. The establishment of a Department of Homeland Security and the USA Patriot Act has put the U.S. government at war with its own citizens and in conflict with the Constitution and the Bill of Rights. This Act allows the government to surreptitiously eavesdrop on the conversations and correspondence of innocent Americans without probable cause.
- 5.2. The money extorted from us to pay illegal income taxes funds a military machine that keeps us afraid of our own government and intent on spreading its totalitarian enslavement to the rest of the world. Is it any wonder why terrorists revolt against interference into their sovereignty by our government using the war-chest of extorted money that it stole from us?

6. **Police intimidation or brutality**

- 6.1. When IRS agents attempt to seize property or conduct a search warrant outside their territorial jurisdiction, they regularly involve local police, to add a color of authority to their illegal actions. This also allows them to claim plausible deniability and blame the local police if something goes wrong.
- 6.2. When 500 political protesters in Washington D.C. peacefully converged to protest a meeting of the World Bank in September 2002, they were overwhelmed by 1,700 police wielding batons, guns, rubber bullets, and teargas because they protested “illegally”. This is a clear violation of the First Amendment.

7. **Outlawing gun ownership**

- 7.1. A number of democrats have proposed outlawing or restricting gun ownership, even though the Second Amendment forbids it. They have tried to ban “assault weapons”, but if they are going to ban weapons, then they better ban government ownership of the same types of weapons in order to keep the playing field even. The reason is that Thomas Jefferson said:

*"What country can preserve its liberties if its rulers are not warned from time to time that their people preserve the spirit of resistance? Let them take arms. The remedy is to set them right as to facts, pardon and pacify them."
[Thomas Jefferson to William Stephens Smith, 1787. ME 6:373, Papers 12:356]*

- 7.2. A disarmed populace is powerless to resist the abuses of armed government agents intent on illegally seizing their property in satisfaction of a fictional tax debt.

All of these tactics are used by the IRS and federal government to maintain and expand its power. Politicians know that the source of nearly ALL political power is economic, and that when you take away most of people’s money and give it to government, they can make you surrender nearly every one of your rights in order to receive the taxable government “privilege” of getting your money back!

*“To preserve [the] independence [of the people,] we must not let our rulers load us with perpetual debt. We must make our election between economy and liberty, or profusion and servitude. If we run into such debts as that we must be taxed in our meat and in our drink, in our necessities and our comforts, in our labors and our amusements, for our callings and our creeds, as the people of England are, our people, like them, must come to labor sixteen hours in the twenty-four, give the earnings of fifteen of these to the government for their debts and daily expenses, and the sixteenth being insufficient to afford us bread, we must live, as they now do, on oatmeal and potatoes, have no time to think, no means of calling the mismanagers to account, but be glad to obtain subsistence by hiring ourselves to rivet their chains on the necks of our fellow-sufferers.”
[Thomas Jefferson to Samuel Kercheval, 1816. ME 15:39]*

If you exercise your sovereignty and don’t pay the tax and protest the indebtedness our corrupt politicians have put us into, the IRS frequently persecutes you mercilessly with endless automated

⁹⁷ See Weeks v. United States, 232 U.S. 383 (1914) and section 8.4.7 later in this book.

anonymous and threatening letters in violation of [28 U.S.C. §876](#), and eventually they will try to throw you in jail for not “volunteering” using laws that don’t even have any implementing regulations that are illegally enforced *outside* of their Constitutionally mandated territorial jurisdiction. It’s vicious, its violent, and its unconscionable tyranny and it must be stopped immediately because it is an act of treason and war on the American people which will eventually dissolve the country and the Union if permitted to take its course. The Supreme Court described the elements of this war in its landmark ruling of *Pollock v. Farmers Loan and Trust*, [157 U.S. 429](#) (1895):

*“The present **assault [that is WAR!!!] upon capital** is but the beginning. **It will be but the stepping stone to others larger and more sweeping**, until our political contest will become war of the poor against the rich; a war of growing intensity and bitterness.*

...

The legislation, in the discrimination it makes, is class legislation. Whenever a distinction is made in the burdens a law imposes or in the benefits it confers on any citizens by reason of their birth, or wealth, or religion, it is class legislation, and leads inevitably to oppression and abuses, and to general unrest and disturbance in society.”

The above is how our evil government runs the Socialist Security Program: like a war on the rich and the wage earners for the benefit of those too lazy to take responsibility for their own retirement. Our government becomes the Robinhood and the war is called “class warfare”, but it is nevertheless still “warfare” that is completely inappropriate in a free society. They try to get you to “volunteer” into their fraudulent system before you are even of the age to be a consenting adult by applying for a number. They have attorneys and IRS agents traveling around the country to convince adolescents that they should sign up for this slavery. Even if it was a contract at that point, the Socialist Security application isn’t enforceable because you weren’t of the age of consent, nor will they later give you an opportunity once you reach adulthood to change your mind. Then they assign you the Socialist Security Number, the Mark of the Beast (Revelation 13:16-18). Once you have the Slave Surveillance Number, the IRS calls it a “taxpayer ID number” in order to create a false presumption that you are “liable” and a “taxpayer”, which incidentally is a violation of your Due Process rights under the Fifth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution. Once you become a “presumed” taxpayer, they write the law so as to fool you and your propagandized attorney into believing that the burden of proof falls on *you* to prove that you are **NOT** liable. This completely turns the whole premise of our legal system upside down in this country, because we are all presumed to be innocent until proven guilty. Instead, those who volunteer (under duress, of course, because in most cases they were coerced and couldn’t get a job without doing so) are assumed to be guilty until THEY prove themselves innocent. That’s like telling someone they are a convicted prostitute (government whore) unless they prove that they aren’t. It’s downright EVIL!

After you sign up for this Slave Surveillance Number (SSN), the government first steals your money and makes it effectively illegal to **stop** contributing, thus outlawing personal responsibility and one’s ownership over one’s labor and person. They will try to slap illegal fines and penalties on you for telling the truth on your tax return that you have no taxable income, for instance, in violation of Article 1, Section 9, Clause 3 of the U.S. Constitution. If you even THINK about disenrolling, they will get all over your employer’s payroll department and slander you in front of your boss, at the same time being unwilling to cite their legal authority for doing so, which by the way doesn’t exist. Then they use the leverage gained by stealing your money to place all kinds of conditions on getting your own money back. For instance, if you are sentenced to jail for crimes, the federal government unilaterally terminates your socialist benefits and forces you in effect to subsidize your own incarceration with the

social security checks they intercept! That's like what they forced Jesus to do: Manufacture his own cross and then nail Him to it! When you realize how manipulative their system is and want to quit, the totalitarian Social Security Administration (SSA) provides no lawful way to quit the program, have your money refunded, and rescind your Slave Surveillance Number, and yet they lie by saying that the program is "voluntary". That is constructive fraud because your compliance isn't voluntary, but compelled, plain and simple. Nothing can be voluntary if there is no legal way to quit, even though no government person can ever show you any kind of contract you ever signed that said that joining was irrevocable. That's tyranny, totalitarianism, and communism, plain and simple.

The common denominator of all of the political warfare and "psyops" (psychological operations) tactics described above is that all of these techniques involve some combination of force or fraud, both of which constitute treason against the Constitutional rights of Americans. Here is how one respected member of the academic community described the terms of this warfare against the American people:

*"Warfare is often defined as the employment of military means to advance political ends... Another, more subtle means -- **political warfare -- uses images, ideas, speeches, slogans, propaganda, economic pressures, even advertising techniques to influence the political will of an adversary.**"*

[James A. Baldwin, Vice Admiral, U.S. Navy in forward to On Political War by Paul A. Smith, National Defense University (1990)]

If you would like to learn more about the verbal abuse tactics that are at the heart of the government's political war against its citizens, we refer you to our Family Constitution, section 3.10 at:

<http://famguardian.org/Publications/FamilyConst/FamilyConst.htm>

If you would like to learn more about communism and socialism and their downright evil "psyops" tactics, visit our Communism and Socialism page at:

<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Communism/Communism.htm>

And finally, if you would like some extensive examples of how this political war is played, we refer you to the content of Chapter 10 of this book.

7.12.5 Willful Ignorance of Public Servants

The same concepts discussed there generally apply toward the government, as well. The differences between our ignorance and that of government servants are distinguished below:

- When we are ignorant, the result will be intellectual and financial slavery to the government and the legal profession.
- When government servants at the bottom of the food chain are ignorant, they are susceptible to being fooled into breaking the laws by greedy and covetous supervisors above them. The result is tyranny on the part of the government, because the government then erroneously acts as through it has far more authority and power than it lawfully has.

Several IRS agents we spoke with indicated that they are trained on procedures but not law. This, in spite of the fact that the government's own courts say the following about our responsibility to know the law:

“Every citizen of the United States is supposed to know the law,...”
[Pierce v. United States, 7 Wall (74 U.S. 169) 666 (1869)]

As long as the procedures of the IRS (found in the Internal Revenue Manual, for instance) illegally perpetuate and expand the power of the IRS and so long as the federal and state courts continue to refuse to hold the supervisors who write these procedures liable and accountable for their breach of fiduciary duty and resulting injury to our rights that bad procedures can produce, then widespread evil, injustice, and violation of due process on the part of government will continue to expand. In such an environment, there will be a built-in incentive for high-level managers at the IRS to:

1. Write internal rules and procedures (Internal Revenue Manual) that violate the law and maximize their revenues, their perceived authority, and their damage to our constitutional rights.
2. Hire people who are ignorant of the laws to administer particularly unethical and illegal areas of government administration, such as income tax collection and assessment.
3. Not train IRS agents on the law but only on procedures so they remain ignorant of the illegal nature of what they are being asked to do.
4. When the deliberately dumbed-down IRS agent finally discovers through his own research and talking with “taxpayers” that what he is being asked to do in the written procedures is illegal, then he is asked resign and the procedures are never corrected, in a clear effort to obstruct justice and cover-up wrongdoing. He is treated as a whistleblower and punished and slandered. This is what happened to Joe Banister, the X IRS Criminal Investigator who discovered after working for the IRS for four years that the IRS was actually committing fraud and extortion and he was asked to resign (see <http://www.freedomabovefortune.com/>).
5. Not update their training materials to accurately and completely reflect the very limited lawful jurisdiction and authority of the government to collect and assess income taxes.
6. Slander, persecute, and harass “taxpayers” who bring up the truth about their limited liabilities using anonymous threatening letters, unjustified and illegal penalties and interest, and threatened civil litigation and criminal prosecution.
7. Claim ignorance of the law when prosecution for wrongdoing is attempted on both government supervisors and their subordinates.

Incidentally, when government is attempting to prosecute a person for tax evasion and the person manifests complete and deliberate ignorance of the tax laws or any violations of it, this situation is known as “willful blindness”, and it’s existence can be used as a fact to be proved by the jury in the process of satisfying the elements of a claim of “willfulness” in the context of tax evasion or fraud. We think the same concept should apply toward government servants who are grossly negligent and deliberately ignorant about and evasive of the tax laws. See the Department of Justice, Tax Division, Criminal Tax Manual, section 8.06[4] at the following web address for a definition of “willful blindness”:

[http://famguardian.org/Publications/DOJTDCTM/taxc08.htm - 8.06\[4\]](http://famguardian.org/Publications/DOJTDCTM/taxc08.htm - 8.06[4])

Below is what the Criminal Tax Manual says on the subject of “willful blindness” in the above referenced section:

8.04[4] Willful Blindness

*It is a defense to a finding of willfulness that the defendant was ignorant of the law or of facts which made the conduct illegal, since willfulness requires a voluntary and intentional violation of a known legal duty. However, if the defendant deliberately avoided acquiring knowledge of a fact or the law, then the jury may infer that he actually knew it and that he was merely trying to avoid giving the appearance (and incurring the consequences) of knowledge. See **United States v. Ramsey**, 785 F.2d 184, 189 (7th Cir.), cert. denied sub nom. **McCreary v. United States**, 476 U.S. 1186 (1986). ⁽⁶⁾*

*In such a case, the use of an "ostrich instruction" -- also known as a deliberate ignorance, conscious avoidance, willful blindness, or a Jewell instruction (see **United States v. Jewell**, 532 F.2d 697 (9th Cir.), cert. denied, 426 U.S. 951 (1976) -- may be appropriate.*

*A number of courts have approved the use of such instructions under proper circumstances. See, e.g., **United States v. Picciandra**, 788 F.2d 39, 46 (1st Cir.), cert. denied, 479 U.S. 847 (1986); **United States v. MacKenzie**; 777 F.2d 811, 818-19 (2^d Cir.), cert. denied, 476 U.S. 1169 (1986); **United States v. Callahan**, 588 F.2d 1078 (5th Cir. 1979); **United States v. Dube**, 820 F.2d 886, 892 (7th Cir. 1987); **United States v. Bussey**, 942 F.2d 1241, 1246 (8th Cir.), cert. denied, 112 S. Ct. 1936 (1991) (post-**Cheek** decision); **United States v. Fingado**, 934 F.2d 1163, 1166-1167 (10th Cir.), cert. denied, 112 S. Ct. 320 (1991). However, it has also been said that the use of such instructions is "rarely appropriate." **United States v. deFrancisco-Lopez**, 939 F.2d 1405, 1409 (10th Cir. 1991) (relying on several 9th Circuit cases).⁽⁷⁾ Thus, it is advisable not to request such an instruction unless it is clearly warranted by the evidence in a particular case. Furthermore, the language of any deliberate ignorance instruction in a criminal tax case must comport with the Government's obligation to prove the voluntary, intentional violation of a known legal duty. The deliberate ignorance instruction set forth in **United States v. Fingado**, 934 F.2d at 1166, appears to be suitable for a criminal tax case.⁽⁸⁾ Further, to avoid potential confusion with the meaning of "willfulness" as it relates to the defendant's intent, it may be wise to avoid use of the phrase "willful blindness," using instead such phrases as "deliberate ignorance" or "conscious avoidance."⁽⁹⁾*

How do the federal courts view this despicable “willful ignorance” and the misapplication of the law by federal employees who practice it? Here is what one judge said about private individuals who practiced the same despicable behavior. You be the judge!:

“Additionally, honesty is inconsistent with willful ignorance of the facts and circumstances available to the creditor, and thus the facts and circumstances that reasonable investigation would have disclosed may be relevant. While ‘honesty’ may require no more than a pure heart, it is questionable that a pure heart can co-exist with closed eyes. It is not honest to close one’s eyes so as to maintain an empty head.”
[*Hale Contracting v. United New Mexico Bank*, 799 P.2d 581 (1990)]

Another way to describe government employees who practice “willful ignorance” is to say that they are operating in “bad faith”, as opposed to “good faith”.

7.12.6 Compelled Income Taxes on Wages (slavery)

Notice we didn’t say “taxes”, but rather “income taxes” based on wage? We’re not objecting to taxes, but to *involuntary* or *compelled* taxes based on wages. Taxes in proportion to one’s wages, as you will find out later, amount to slavery. If one’s income tax bracket is 28%, then they are a slave to the government for the first 28% of the year. There is no other way to look at it. But wait a minute, you say, the Thirteenth amendment and the civil war ended slavery, right? Economic slavery is still slavery, no matter how you want to look at it! That’s why the Constitution forbids direct taxes by the federal government on natural persons (people like you and I).because our founding fathers wisely understood this relationship between income from labor and direct taxes on that income by the government.

Interestingly, if you look up the word slave in the dictionary, you will find out that the word refers to a person who has no property rights. Labor has intrinsic value and is therefore property, because you

can exchange it for money, but the exchange doesn't involve profit in the taxable sense, because it is an equal exchange. Therefore, any attempt by the government to tax income from the equal exchange of one type of property for another amounts to tyranny. This was made very clear in the case of *Butcher's Union Co. v. Crescent City Company* (111 U.S. 746):

"Among these unalienable rights, as proclaimed in the Declaration of Independence is the right of men to pursue their happiness, by which is meant, the right any lawful business or vocation, in any manner not inconsistent with the equal rights of others, which may increase their prosperity or develop their faculties, so as to give them their highest enjoyment...It has been well said that, THE PROPERTY WHICH EVERY MAN HAS IS HIS OWN LABOR, AS IT IS THE ORIGINAL FOUNDATION OF ALL OTHER PROPERTY SO IT IS THE MOST SACRED AND INVIOABLE..."

7.12.7 Government identifying numbers: Mark of the Beast

"16 And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads:

17 And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six."
[Revelation 13:16-18, Bible]

The Socialist Security Number in today's society has become a very powerful tool for restraint of individual liberties and for tracking people down mercilessly and controlling them. It is a key tool used by law enforcement for locating individuals who are wanted. Given a person's social security number, you can, for a fee, use national databases to determine the following information about a person without their consent:

1. Credit cards and loans.
2. Credit history.
3. Income tax returns filed.
4. Government benefits received, including social security and medicare benefits.
5. Vehicles that have loans on them.
6. Real property that has loans on it.
7. Bank accounts.
8. Safe deposit boxes.
9. Driver's licenses and current address using driver's license number.

This information is most useful to the IRS in tracking tax protesters down and destroying their lives by confiscating and levying their assets, even if they owe no taxes, without a trial or due process of law. The only way for a person to protect his or her privacy from such abuse is to ensure that they never apply for or use a social security number, do not provide it when asked for it, and remove themselves from the Social Security System immediately so they can get rid of the "mark of the beast". One has to wonder, doesn't the 4th Amendment protect our privacy? How is it that a bank can legally refuse serving us and force us to give up our privacy and get a number on our forehead just to be able to have a bank account?

For detailed information on Socialist Security Numbers, refer to the website: <http://www.nossn.com/>. This site is very interesting. Also, if you want to free yourself of the coercion you feel about having to participate in social security, refer to section 14.4.1: Social security asseveration of coercion.

7.12.7.1 Coercion: The Enumeration At Birth Program

Under the "Enumeration at Birth Program", the U.S. government has instituted a means to in effect "bar code" babies (mark of the beast, Rev. 13:16-18) when they are born right there at the hospital so they can get into the tax system immediately and be tracked by government computers as "wards of the state".

The Social Security Administration will always tell you that getting an SSN is strictly voluntary. They will tell you that no one is required to get a SSN to live and work in the United States. The law will confirm this. The only people required to get a SSN is aliens upon admission into the United States and "All other Applicants". What they will not do is tell you that they are going to do everything in their power to make sure that everyone is enumerated. For example, here is the procedure if a parent objects to a newborn getting a SSN under the "Enumeration at Birth Program." Notice how they will pretend that the state inadvertently keyed "yes." And this is what our hospitals are instructed to do! You can't even have a baby without the state trying to assign a Socialist Security Number! Of course, you have the right to object as a parent to assigning an SSN, but the fact is that they already have a number and a card assigned before they ask you if you want one and make it inconvenient to say no.

THE SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER POLICY AND GENERAL PROCEDURES

TN 16 6-90 RM 00905.100B.

00205.100 PARENT OBJECTS TO ASSIGNMENT OF SSN TO CHILD
UNDER THE ENUMERATION AT BIRTH PROGRAM

A. POLICY SSA does not change, void or cancel SSNs. In special situations, SSA will delete the applicant information from the SSN record.

B. PROCEDURE A parent may object when a child is assigned an SSN.

If a child is issued an SSN card via the Enumeration at Birth program (the online NUMIDENT shows "FMC:6" for Enumeration at Birth items) and the mother states she answered "no" to the enumeration question when providing birth information for the newborn, assume that the State inadvertently keyed "yes", and follow these steps:

STEP ACTION

1 Explain that the child will need an SSN, by at least age 2, if he/she will be listed as a dependent on an income tax return.

* If the parent accepts this explanation and will keep the SSN card, stop.

* If this is not acceptable, go to step 2.

2 Explain that on SSA's records, the account will remain dormant, unless earnings are posted on the record.

* If the parent accepts this explanation and will keep the card, stop.

* If the parent accepts the explanation but does not want the SSN card, take the card and destroy the card (RM 00201.060). Explain that when an application is later made for an SSN card the same number will be assigned.

* If the parent insists that we delete the SSN record, explain that the deletion action may take several months. (Go to step 3.)

3 * Document the parent's objection and advise the parent that the case must be sent to central office (CO) for review.

* Explain to the parent that if we delete the applicant information from the SSN record, a subsequent SSN request (likely before the child is age 2) will result in a different SSN. In addition, if and when the parent files for an SSN for the child in the future, he/she should enter "no" in item 10 on the SS-5.

* Forward all material pertinent to the situation (including the FO observation and recommendation) to CO at:

Social Security Administration
 ORSI, DE, E&R
 3-E-26 Operations Building
 6401 Security Blvd.
 Baltimore, MD 21235

4 Request review of the case and action concerning the parent's request for deletion of the data from the SSN record. Send a copy of the entire file to the appropriate regional office so that they can discuss ongoing problems with the involved State.

The above page was reprinted (without permission) from the SSA website. Of course this will confirm that it is voluntary. It certainly doesn't seem that way. I have talked to many parents who were told that they could not leave the hospital without getting a SSN for their newborn. Do I detect shades of Nazi Germany here somewhere?

7.12.7.2 Coercion: Denying Benefits for Those who Refuse to Provide Government Identifying Numbers

While there are no laws forcing citizens to obtain or use their Socialist Security Number, for all practical purposes, its use has become mandatory. Consider the following scenarios that mitigate against functioning in our culture without a social security number:

1. You cannot obtain a loan or a credit card or open a bank or checking account at the vast majority of U.S. Banks, without a Socialist Security Number, even if your credit expenditures are guaranteed by collateral deposits. If you ask the banks why, they will say: "Well, the only way we can get information about your credit history is with your social security number. Furthermore, we're not denying you a privilege like loans, because you can always go to another bank." That's just a smokescreen, of course, because if you ask them who grants credit or bank accounts without a social security number, they will know of no one to refer you to, because there aren't any banks in the U.S. that would. This amounts to legalized discrimination that ought to be punished by court sanctions.
2. There are no banks that will allow you to have a safe deposit box without a social security number.
3. You can't claim your children as tax deductions on your federal income tax returns without providing their social security number. Of course, no one at the IRS advertises that you don't need the social security and can substitute an affidavit and a copy of the birth certificate, because they don't want you knowing that you don't need a socialist security number for your child.
4. Some employers will say they can't hire you unless they have a social security number, even though they are mistaken and the law says they can't do this.
5. In some states now, you cannot get a driver's license without a social security number. The justification the courts and states use is that they need to be able to do this so that "deadbeat dads" will lose their driver's license if they don't pay child support, but the fact of the matter is that they insist on your socialist security number even if you aren't a parent and don't plan on being one. That is because this gives them one more way to find you and one less way you can hide.
6. You cannot get a mailbox without at least two forms of identification AND a home address where you live, as per Postal Service form 1583. Acceptable forms of identification include government civilian or military ID cards, which have your social security number on them. Furthermore, a copy of the holder's identifying information must be provided to the postal service on a copy of the application.
7. You cannot get student loans without a social security number.
8. You can't apply for AFDC, Medicaid, unemployment compensation, food stamps, or state programs without a socialist security number.
9. You can't be an officer of a food retail store that accepts food stamps without having a social security number.
10. You can't serve on a jury without someone asking you for your SSN.
11. You can't apply for a HUD program without providing your SSN.

So how can one survive without social security numbers? Here are some ideas:

1. Use cash or gold for all financial transactions.
2. Refuse to divulge your social security number to anyone.
3. Have offshore bank accounts and credit cards from banks that do not require social security numbers and which will respect your privacy and not divulge your transactions to the IRS.
4. When claiming your children as tax deductions, do not obtain or use their social security number on your income tax return, if you submit one of course. Instead, submit a copy of the birth certificate for each child along with an affidavit claiming you are the parent of that child.

5. Do not provide your social security number on your income tax returns. Also, do not provide your direct home address on your income tax returns in order to preserve your privacy. Give your overseas mail forwarder address instead.
6. Do not file a W-4 to institute withholding at your employer. Filing of this form is voluntary. If you do file the form or are forced to, refuse to provide your social security number.
7. Obtain an overseas driver's license so you don't need a local one that requires divulging your social security number.
8. Avoid putting anything in a local bank account or safe deposit box, and if you do, assume it will be confiscated by the government or the I.R.S. illegally.
9. Use offshore postal forwarders, who will respect your privacy and forward your mail confidentially to your local address.
10. Prosecute employers vigorously who discriminate against employees who do not have or will not provide their social security number. This behavior is clearly illegal.

7.12.8 Paper Money

7.12.8.1 What is Money?

The most powerful and enlightening discussion of money we have ever seen comes from a book by Ayn Rand entitled *Atlas Shrugged*. This book is highly recommended for freedom fighters and we guarantee it will change your view of the world forever. The theme of the book is laissez faire capitalism v. socialism and it does a very good job comparing the two in a practical sense by showing why capitalism is the only one of the two that is compatible with having a free country. It is a fiction book but it has a powerful non-fiction message we are sure you will enjoy. Below is an excerpt from that marvelous book on page 387 of the 35th Anniversary Edition.

*Rearden heard Bertram Scudder, outside the group, say to a girl who made some sound of indignation, "Don't let him disturb you. **You know, money is the root of all evil**--and he's the typical product of money."*

Rearden did not think that Francisco could have heard it, but he saw Francisco turning to them with a gravely courteous smile.

*"So you think that money is the root of all evil?" said Francisco d'Aconia. "**Have you ever asked what is the root of money? Money is a tool of exchange, which can't exist unless there are goods produced and men able to produce them. Money is the material shape of the principle that men who wish to deal with one another must deal by trade and give value for value. Money is not the tool of the moochers [the politicians and demagogues], who claim your product by tears, or of the looters [the IRS], who take it from you by force. Money is made possible only by the men who produce [not STEAL]. Is this what you consider evil?**"*

"When you accept money in payment for your effort, you do so only on the conviction that you will exchange it for the product of the effort of others. It is not the moochers or the looters who give value to money. Not an ocean of tears nor all the guns in the world can transform those pieces of paper in your wallet into the bread you will need to survive tomorrow. Those pieces of paper, which should have been gold, are a token of honor-- your claim upon the energy of the men who produce. Your wallet is your statement of hope that somewhere in the world around you there are men who will not default on that moral principle which is the root of money. Is this what you consider evil?"

*"Have you ever looked for the root of production? Take a look at an electric generator and dare tell yourself that it was created by the muscular effort of unthinking brutes. Try to grow a seed of wheat without the knowledge left to you by men who had to discover it for the first time. Try to obtain your food by means of nothing but physical motions--and you'll learn that **man's mind is the root of all the goods produced and of all the wealth that has ever existed on earth.**"*

*"But you say that money is made by the strong at the expense of the weak? What strength do you mean? It is not the strength of guns or muscles. **Wealth is the product of man's capacity to think.** Then is money made by the man who invents a motor at the expense of those who did not invent it? Is money made by the intelligent at the expense of the fools? By the able at the expense of the incompetent? By the ambitious at the expense of the lazy? **Money is MADE--before it can be looted or mooched--made by the effort of every honest man, each to the extent of his ability. An honest man is one who knows that he can't consume more than he has produced [like the government has been doing for decades with inflation and deficit spending].**"*

"To trade by means of money is the code of the men of good will. Money rests on the axiom that every man is the owner of his mind and his effort. Money allows no power to prescribe the value of your effort except by the voluntary choice of the man who is willing to trade you his effort in return. Money permits you to obtain for your goods and your labor that which they are worth to the men who buy them, but no more. Money permits no deals except those to mutual benefit by the unforced judgment of the traders. Money demands of you the recognition that men must work for their own benefit, not for their own injury, for their gain, not their loss--the recognition that they are not beasts of burden, born to carry the weight of your misery--that you must offer them values, not wounds--that the common bond among men is not the exchange of suffering, but the exchange of GOODS. Money demands that you sell, not your weakness to

men's stupidity, but your talent to their reason; it demands that you buy, not the shoddiest they offer, but the best your money can find. And when men live by trade--with reason, not force, as their final arbiter--it is the best product that wins, the best performance, the man of best judgment and highest ability--and the degree of a man's productiveness is the degree of his reward. This is the code of existence whose tool and symbol is money. Is this what you consider evil?

"But money is only a tool. It will take you wherever you wish, but it will not replace you as the driver. It will give you the means for the satisfaction of your desires, but it will not provide you with desires. Money is the scourge of the men who attempt to reverse the law of causality--the men who seek to replace the mind by seizing the products of the mind.

"Money will not purchase happiness for the man who has no concept of what he wants; money will not give him a code of values, if he's evaded the knowledge of what to value, and it will not provide him with a purpose, if he's evaded the choice of what to seek. Money will not buy intelligence for the fool, or admiration for the coward, or respect for the incompetent. The man who attempts to purchase the brains of his superiors to serve him, with his money replacing his judgment, ends up by becoming the victim of his inferiors. The men of intelligence desert him, but the cheats and the frauds come flocking to him, drawn by a law which he has not discovered: that no man may be smaller than his money. Is this the reason why you call it evil?

"Only the man who does not need it, is fit to inherit wealth--the man who would make his own fortune no matter where he started. If an heir is equal to his money, it serves him; if not, it destroys him. But you look on and you cry that money corrupted him. Did it? Or did he corrupt his money? Do not envy a worthless heir; his wealth is not yours and you would have done no better with it. Do not think that it should have been distributed among you; loading the world with fifty parasites instead of one, would not bring back the dead virtue which was the fortune. Money is a living power that dies without its root. Money will not serve that mind that cannot match it. Is this the reason why you call it evil?

"Money is your means of survival. The verdict which you pronounce upon the source of your livelihood is the verdict you pronounce upon your life. If the source is corrupt, you have damned your own existence. Did you get your money by fraud? By pandering to men's vices or men's stupidity? By catering to fools, in the hope of getting more than your ability deserves? By lowering your standards? By doing work you despise for purchasers you scorn? If so, then your money will not give you a moment's or a penny's worth of joy. Then all the things you buy will become, not a tribute to you, but a reproach; not an achievement, but a reminder of shame. Then you'll scream that money is evil. Evil, because it would not pinch-hit for your self-respect? Evil, because it would not let you enjoy your depravity? Is this the root of your hatred of money?

"Money will always remain an effect and refuse to replace you as the cause. Money is the product of virtue, but it will not give you virtue and it will not redeem your vices. Money will not give you the unearned, neither in matter nor in spirit. Is this the root of your hatred of money?

"Or did you say it's the LOVE of money that's the root of all evil? To love a thing is to know and love its nature. To love money is to know and love the fact that money is the creation of the best power within you, and your passkey to trade your effort for the effort of the best among men. It's the person who would sell his soul for a nickel, who

is the loudest in proclaiming his hatred of money--and he has good reason to hate it. The lovers of money are willing to work for it. They know they are able to deserve it."

"Let me give you a tip on a clue to men's characters: the man who damns money has obtained it dishonorably; the man who respects it has earned it.

"Run for your life from any man who tells you that money is evil. That sentence is the leper's bell of an approaching looter. So long as men live together on earth and need means to deal with one another--their only substitute, if they abandon money, is the muzzle of a gun.

"But money demands of you the highest virtues, if you wish to make it or to keep it. Men who have no courage, pride, or self-esteem, men who have no moral sense of their right to their money and are not willing to defend it as they defend their life, men who apologize for being rich--will not remain rich for long. They are the natural bait for the swarms of looters that stay under rocks for centuries, but come crawling out at the first smell of a man who begs to be forgiven for the guilt of owning wealth. They will hasten to relieve him of the guilt--and of his life, as he deserves.

"Then you will see the rise of the double standard--the men who live by force [the government and the IRS and scumbag lawyers], yet count on those who live by trade to create the value of their looted money--the men who are the hitchhikers of virtue. In a moral society, these are the criminals, and the statutes are written to protect you against them. But when a society establishes criminals-by-right and looters-by-law--men who use force to seize the wealth of DISARMED victims--then money becomes its creators' avenger. Such looters [IRS] believe it safe to rob defenseless [made ignorant of the law by sneaky lawyers and politicians who run the public education system, in this case] men, once they've passed a law to disarm them. But their loot becomes the magnet for other looters, who get it from them as they got it. Then the race goes, not to the ablest at production, but to those most ruthless at brutality. When force is the standard, the murderer wins over the pickpocket. And then that society vanishes, in a spread of ruins and slaughter.

"Do you wish to know whether that day is coming? Watch money. Money is the barometer of a society's virtue. When you see that trading is done, not by consent, but by compulsion--when you see that in order to produce, you need to obtain permission from men who produce nothing--when you see that money is flowing to those who deal, not in goods, but in favors--when you see that men get richer by graft and by pull than by work, and your laws don't protect you against them, but protect them against you--when you see corruption being rewarded and honesty becoming a self-sacrifice--you may know that your society is doomed. Money is so noble a medium that it does not compete with guns and it does not make terms with brutality. It will not permit a country to survive as half-property, half-loot.

"Whenever destroyers [the IRS, the Federal Reserve, and the Dept of INjustice] appear among men, they start by destroying money, for money is men's protection and the base of a moral existence. Destroyers seize gold and leave to its owners a counterfeit pile of paper. This kills all objective standards and delivers men

*into the arbitrary power of an arbitrary setter of values. Gold was an objective value, an equivalent of wealth produced. Paper is a mortgage on wealth that does not exist, backed by a gun aimed at those who are expected to produce it. **Paper is a check drawn by legal looters upon an account which is not theirs: upon the virtue of the victims.** Watch for the day when it becomes, marked: 'Account overdrawn.'*

"When you have made evil [government looting through fraud, obfuscation and complication of the tax laws, and through vote for sugar-daddies who promise loot] the means of survival, do not expect men to remain good. Do not expect them to stay moral and lose their lives for the purpose of becoming the fodder of the immoral. Do not expect them to produce, when production is punished and looting rewarded. Do not ask, 'Who is destroying the world?' You are.

"You stand in the midst of the greatest achievements of the greatest productive civilization and you wonder why it's crumbling around you, while you're damning its life-blood--money. You look upon money as the savages did before you, and you wonder why the jungle is creeping back to the edge of your cities. Throughout men's history, money was always seized by looters of one brand or another, but whose method remained the same: to seize wealth by force and to keep the producers bound, demeaned, defamed, deprived of honor. That phrase about the evil of money, which you mouth with such righteous recklessness, comes from a time when wealth was produced by the labor of slaves--slaves who repeated the motions once discovered by somebody's mind and left unimproved for centuries. So long as production was ruled by force, and wealth was obtained by conquest, there was little to conquer. Yet through all the centuries of stagnation and starvation, men exalted the looters, as aristocrats of the sword, as aristocrats of birth, as aristocrats of the bureau, and despised the producers, as slaves, as traders, as shopkeepers--as industrialists.

*"To the glory of mankind, there was, for the first and only time in history, a **COUNTRY OF MONEY**--and I have no higher, more reverent tribute to pay to America, for this means: a country of reason, justice, freedom, production, achievement. For the first time, man's mind and money were set free, and there were no fortunes-by-conquest, but only fortunes-by-work, and instead of swordsmen and slaves, there appeared the real maker of wealth, the greatest worker, the highest type of human being--the self-made man--the American industrialist.*

"If you ask me to name the proudest distinction of Americans, I would choose--because it contains all the others--the fact that they were the people who created the phrase 'to MAKE money.' No other language or nation had ever used these words before; men had always thought of wealth as a static quantity--to be seized, begged, inherited, shared, looted, or obtained as a favor. Americans were the first to understand that wealth has to be created. The words 'to make money' hold the essence of human morality.

"Yet these were the words for which Americans were denounced by the rotted cultures of the looters' continents. Now the looters' credo has brought you to regard your proudest [capitalist] achievements as a hallmark of shame, your prosperity as guilt, your greatest men, the industrialists, as blackguards, and your magnificent factories as the product and property of muscular labor, the labor of whip-driven slaves, like the pyramids of Egypt. The rotter [the [IRS](#) and the federal and state governments] who simpers that he sees no difference between the power of the dollar and the power of the whip, ought to learn the difference on his own hide-as, I think, he will.

"Until and unless you discover that money is the root of all good, you ask for your own destruction. When money ceases to be the tool by which men deal with one another, then men become the tools of men. Blood, whips and guns--or dollars. Take your choice--there is no other--and your time is running out."

Powerful stuff, folks! If you would like more information about Ayn Rand's book above, please refer to our website at:

<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/JohnGalt/JohnGalt.htm>

7.12.8.2 "Separation of Money and State"

A very popular term in our age of political correctness is the term "separation of church and state". This term was first coined by Thomas Jefferson in a letter to the Danbury Baptist Church on October 7, 1801 and has been cited in several subsequent rulings by the Supreme Court which removed prayer from the schools and from other aspects of public life. However, how many people know that in

addition to “separation of church and state”, our founders also sought “separation of *money* and state”? Very few people understand this concept and why it is so important, so we will devote this section to this fascinating concept.

The original purposes of currency were simple, but complete insofar as serving the purposes of involved parties. The original forms of currency arose spontaneously in accord with the desired structure of trade. In such an original form, the money, if any, was a token of value. No party which contributed nothing to the trade, profited from it.

Ultimately, governments would come to regulate monetary circulations. In very many cases, because the power to issue currencies is the opportunity to take tremendous unearned profit from entire nations, the advantages of a circulation which could be honored by — and which could fully serve — a broad trade system, were subverted and abused.

The colonies of the United States of America were unique among the nations and nations-to-be of the world, as they modeled their currency to replicate solely, trade between consenting parties, **that no party extrinsic to the trade profited unjustly from it.** This is what we call “separation of money and state”: a situation where even though the government created the money, they could not manipulate its value to their advantage because they could not arbitrarily create more money with a printing press. If they could arbitrarily print more money, then they would lower the value of the money in circulation and thereby “tax” all the money in existence.

The virtues of the near perfect American Colonial system therefore comprised the greatest possible threat to systems of multiplying indebtedness, because the very complete freedom to prosper without impediment, inherent solely to the perfected attributes exemplified by the American Colonial system, vibrantly demonstrated the iniquities of unjust profit rendered by the multiplication of debt inherent to, and irreversible within, central banking systems.

The money of the American Colonies thus became the principal cause of the American Revolution.

On behalf of the Bank of England, British Parliament ordered the colonists to give up their interest-free currency. No such system as the colonists had devised could be allowed to demonstrate the impoverishing costs imposed by the plutocrats, of a currency subject to multiplied, unearned profit. By dictate of the plutocracy of England, in America, as everywhere else in the world, debt would be perpetually and irreversibly multiplied upon the unassenting subjects of the system, to their ever greater detriment.

The colonists would pay some thirty-percent annual interest for the imposed currency. Benjamin Franklin reported, "Within a year, the poor houses were filled. The hungry and homeless walked the streets everywhere." He later explained, "We would have gladly borne the little tax on tea and other matters, if it had not been that they took from us our money, which created great unemployment and dissatisfaction."

How did the concept of money first originate, and what is the vital difference between such a money as the colonists devised, and the more convoluted instrument issued in its stead by the Bank of England — prototype of the central banking systems of the present world?

One day, a producer of a given product was approached by another. The latter said, "I have not yet produced the thing(s) which I will in turn present to you, which I can produce if you first produce the thing(s) I ask of you."

The first saw the prospective benefit of this commitment, should the second be so good as to perform the resultant obligation. Trust was involved; and the "money" that was thus created was comprised of the incumbent trust.

Money was created when the debtor was willing to attest to their obligation. The obligation was so much as penned to paper, which in turn represented the value, and very immutable units of, that which they promised to deliver. The paper, new money itself, held by the creditor party of the trade, was evidence of the debt. The value of the money held by the creditor was a promise to pay — a note⁹⁸.

A note is only so good as the integrity and capacity of the debtor to fulfill their obligation. No note, regardless of who issues it, is any better.

How do we emulate free, unimpeded trade by management of a circulation; and what properties must a commerce system provide, that it not impose injustice on its subjects?

If the value of our original note were diminished over time, the creditor might receive less than the intended obligation of the debtor, or vice versa. In order not to subvert the purposes of trade commitments or corrupt the value or cost of accumulated savings or assets, the value of currency must be consistent across time.

How is money to be introduced to the circulation?

The answer to this question rests on the further questions, must money represent debt; and when should money come into existence?

When new prosperity is rendered, and if money is to represent debt, and if the circulation is to represent the value of all things related to it, the singular place and time money can be and must be introduced to circulation, is when new wealth is created. If a circulation is to represent the value of things in part by constant proportion to those things, and if it is undesirable that a circulation impede trade, then the volume of circulation must be equal to the value of the volume of things for which it was created, and which might be traded, all at once, by it. Nothing less than such a circulation provides for full, immediate trade.

The need for further circulation thus coincides with the production of new wealth. This therefore is when new circulation must be introduced; and the quantity to be introduced must be equal to the new wealth.

Distribution of the circulation is readily solved. Where new circulation is required, it is distributed to the producer of the wealth, and the consumer of the wealth assumes a debt equal to the original value of the wealth.

⁹⁸note: A note is a promise to pay. Modern currencies are originally issued as debts. The value of the currency is comprised of, and represents, the original commitment of the debtor to fulfill the obligation.

Rate of payment is also readily solved. Only by paying against just such debts at the rate of consumption, is money in circulation kept equal to the current value of debt-related wealth; and then, and then only, are we paying only for what we consume, with an equal measure of our own production.

Only in such a system is the circulation always adequate to pay all debt; is there no inflation or deflation; is there no manipulation of value or cost by scarcity of circulation; is there no impediment to prosperity for scarcity of circulation; and is there no multiplication of debt in proportion to commerce, as inherent to interest.

Here and here alone, have we replicated entirely the conditions and interaction of our original two, unimpeded traders.

By agreeing together to issue and regulate such a currency by such a prescription, the integrity of the currency is further assured by society together (government) holding debtors accountable to fulfill the obligations represented by the "money." This was the apparent conviction of the American Colonists, who fought a revolution to defend their currency.

A government of free people and representing free people, such as the original United States Government, was not established to profit from the people. It could not enrich itself from their trades because all of its money had to be gold and silver.

The history of the American "Economy" led indirectly to a far different end than the founders fought for. In a century of strife, descendants of the original central bankers the American public had cast off, ultimately were successful in imposing just such a privately owned "banking" system as necessary to issue a currency with the additional attribute and ramifications of "interest."

Under the so-called "Federal Reserve" System — a conglomerate of international banks — a currency would be issued such as engendered the hunger and homelessness Franklin explained compelled the American Revolution.

What is the distinct nature of the central banker's interest bearing debt currency⁹⁹; and what are the consequences of it?

The currency and interaction of modern central banks is analogous to a third party imposing upon our original two-party trade.

This third party, by nature extrinsic to the trade, produces nothing, and intrinsically contributes nothing to commerce. The extrinsic party writes the obligation to pay for the debtor party, and makes the obligation to pay no better than the debtor party's original promise, but adds to the cost of the transaction, whatever "interest" they coerce from the debtor by virtue of the need for such a token of exchange, as necessary to convey the diverse and dissimilar products of modern commerce.

The entire body of vying commerce then is reduced to a pool of debtors committed to deliver debt-and-interest obligations which, from the very beginning, exceed the entire such circulation.

The central banker has provided the original traders nothing they aren't fully capable of providing themselves, and something they certainly are fully capable of providing, in concert with further traders,

⁹⁹interest-bearing debt currency: A currency loaned into circulation, and comprising a debt subject to "interest."

to all commerce together. But by displacing such an equitable system with a paper or coin currency, the essential promises of which no banker fulfills, the system is subject to profit by interest, and the additional ramifications of interest — whatever those ramifications be.

What are the ramifications of "interest?"

In order to maintain the circulation vital to repaying their debts, and vital to sustaining the further, greater commerce necessary to repaying the obligations of those debts, which include interest, the subjects of the system are compelled to re-borrow what they pay against principal and interest as subsequent debts, increased so much as periodic interest¹⁰⁰.

So long as the system exists — so long as interest exists — debt is multiplied in proportion to a circulation, or the commerce which can be sustained by it. Ever more of the circulation must be devoted to servicing debt, altogether, at the ever greater profit of the central bankers, who provide no contribution to prosperity, for the mere, ostensible service of qualifying our credit-worthiness, and counting what we pay them in multiples of our own production.

As the sum of debt is multiplied, greater sums of interest are paid and re-borrowed; and thus debt increases by ever greater increments of periodic interest.

Ultimately, one thing — debt service — increasing in proportion to another — the capacity of commerce to support and survive debt — exceeds the latter.

While a society might issue and regulate its circulation without limitation and for the mere costs of qualifying creditworthiness (without impeding credit-worthiness) and accounting for (far less) payment of debt... from the very beginning a central banking system establishes total debts (principal plus interest) which cannot be paid by the circulation, and which, in order to maintain the vital circulation, inherently and irreversibly multiply debt to our ever greater detriment, and ultimate imposition of system-wide insoluble debt.

So, we see, modern "capitalism" is not true, free enterprise; and the nature of money is critical to the vitality and freedom of enterprise. **By mandating that gold and silver be the basis for all money in the American Constitution, and because gold and silver are limited commodities that cannot arbitrarily be created, the founders endowed us with a monetary system that provided “perfect separation between money and state”, which kept politicians from interfering with and profiting unjustly from our trade.** Because this system was so perfect in isolating money from politics, the politicians had to invent a way to end the coupling of gold with money, and they did this through a succession of devious machinations over the years:

1. The Federal Reserve Act was passed in 1913 right after the Sixteenth Amendment was passed allegedly authorizing an income tax. See section 7.12.9 for further details. The income tax provided a way to “sop up” excess government dollars in circulation put there by a spend-a-holic government so that hyperinflation could be prevented if government printing of money got out of control.
2. The coupling of gold to money was undermined in 1933 when Franklin D. Roosevelt introduced the Trading with the Enemy Act and recalled all the gold in circulation as currency and made it illegal inside the federal zone to own gold. See section 6.2.2 for further details on this scam.

¹⁰⁰ periodic interest: Interest paid in any period of examination. The periodic interest of a year is the interest paid over the period of a year.

3. President Nixon completely eliminated the coupling of gold to money in 1971 by outlawing the redemption of federal reserve notes for gold.

After these “reforms and improvements” were made to our monetary system, we were transformed to more closely follow the central banking model used by most other tyrannical socialistic European governments at the time. We also had an economy ripe for inflation and instability and one where our government could print as much money as it wanted and thereby lower the value of the currency in exchange, and this is exactly what they did. In the early 1980’s following President Nixon’s decision to eliminate redeemability of Federal Reserve Notes in gold, interest and inflation rates climbed as high as 20% per year and this had been unheard of in all the previous history of America when we were on the gold standard.

If you would like to know more about the concept of “Separation of Money and State”, we refer you to the website called “People for a Perfect Economy” at:

<http://www.perfecteconomy.com/>

7.12.8.3 The Founders Rejected Paper Currency

Today, inflation is a way of life and America isn't just swimming in debt, it's drowning. Consumer credit debt and business loans are at an all time high. Many state and city governments are nearly broke and Orange County, California declared bankruptcy at one time.

Everyone knows that borrowing results in debt. But does anyone know what it is that is actually being borrowed?

- Is it credit or money?
- And is there any difference?
- What exactly is money?
- A circulating medium of exchange?
- A store of intrinsic value?
- Evidence of credit or debt, or all of these?

Gold and silver, on the other hand, represent a finite amount of stored value that has been mined and refined through the toil and sweat of human labor and cannot simply be printed into existence as needed. Precious metals have intrinsic, inherent value. Inflation is the condition where each newly printed and circulating paper dollar reduces the value of all other dollars already in circulation.

The Founders expressly state their firm desire to never allow a paper currency here in America. According to the records of the Constitutional Convention, the suggestion that the federal government be given the power to "emit bills of credit"--meaning to issue paper money--was angrily denounced and voted down. One of the reasons the constitutional convention was called was that the Continental Dollar had just collapsed, having gone from 8:1 against the Spanish milled dollar to 1,000:1 within just one year. Barbershops and other establishments were wallpapering their rooms with Continentals, they were so worthless.

The Founder's personal experience with the then recent hyperinflation and collapse of the paper Continental Dollar, combined with their knowledge of the inflationary history of central governments

in England and Europe, had taught them that rulers inevitably resort to the printing press to create as much new money as needed until their inflated paper currencies became worthless. The Founders knew that paper money is artificial money, unlike gold and silver which are valuable, durable, and limited in supply. This was exemplified in the writings of Thomas Jefferson, the author of our constitution:

*"Paper is poverty,... it is only the ghost of money, and not money itself."
[Thomas Jefferson to Edward Carrington, 1788. ME 7:36]*

*"That paper money has some advantages is admitted. But that its abuses also are inevitable and, by breaking up the measure of value, makes a lottery of all private property, cannot be denied.
[Thomas Jefferson to Josephus B. Stuart, 1817. ME 15:113]*

*"It is a cruel thought, that, when we feel ourselves standing on the firmest ground in every respect, the cursed arts of our secret enemies, combining with other causes, should effect, by depreciating our money, what the open arms of a powerful enemy could not."
[Thomas Jefferson to Richard Henry Lee, 1779. ME 4:298, Papers 2:298]*

In *How To Achieve Personal and Financial Privacy In a Public Age*, author Mark Nestmann writes:

Gold is still the ultimate store of wealth. It's the world's only true money. And there isn't much of it to go around. All of it ever mined would fit into a small building --a 56 foot cube. The annual world production would fit into a 14 foot cube, roughly the size of an ordinary living room. If each Chinese citizen were to buy just one ounce, it would take up the annual supply for the next 200 years.

Making Sense Out Of The Dollar, published in September 1, 1980, by the American Institute For Economic Research, Great Barrington, Massachusetts, stated:

When President Nixon nullified the U.S. promise to pay dollars for dollar claims in 1971, the U.S. monetary unit was changed from gold to a nothing. Obviously the two monetary units are vastly different, inasmuch as the former was a "dollar," the later cannot also be a "dollar." Fiat monetary units have a perfect record of failure, and when they are viewed as nothing units, that outcome is more plainly understandable.

How was the dollar once connected to gold? The U.S. Congress authorized the minting of gold coins on April 1, 1792, with a dollar specified as 24.75 grains of pure gold. this established a "price" for gold of \$19.39 per troy ounce (480 grains per troy ounce divided by 24.785 grains per dollar equals 19.39 dollars per troy ounce).

In 1834 the gold content of the ten dollar coin produced by the U.S. Mint, the "eagle," was reduced from 247.5 grains to 232 grains of pure gold, establishing one dollar as 23.20 grains and a gold price of \$20.67 per ounce. In 1934 President Roosevelt devalued the dollar to 13.71 grains of pure gold. This raised the "price" to \$35.00 per ounce.

On August 15 , 1971 President Nixon declared that the U.S. Treasury no longer would meet its promise to pay gold, in exchange for dollar claims. By 1971, nearly all of the paper currency in circulation consisted of Federal Reserve Notes in various denominations. A demand "note" ordinarily is evidence of a promise to pay or to deliver something on demand. For many years this was indicated by a printed statement on the

paper currency to the effect that the U.S. Treasury would deliver the indicated number of dollars (amount of gold) on demand in exchange for the paper claims to the dollars.

As new paper currency was printed after 1971, the promise to pay was deleted from the Federal Reserve notes. Although still designated as a "note," which ordinarily implies a promise to pay something on demand or at some designated future time, the Federal Reserve notes now issued not only do not represent anything (as did gold certificates or silver certificates) but also they do not promise anything. They do not even purport to be anything other than identical pieces of paper printed with varying numbers.

Such a piece of paper currency is a no-thing having exchange value as a physical substance. Moreover, it does not even purport to be a claim on any thing. Today's dollar is totally a fiat currency. Fiat money is nonredeemable paper, a no-thing. As long as people will continue to give something for nothing, as long as there are human "sheep" willing to be shorn, as long as savings can so readily be embezzled by depreciating the money in use, the "game" can go on.

7.12.8.4 War of Independence Fought Over Paper Money

Most Americans are never taught that the real reason the War For Independence was fought was over paper money. In his book *The Almighty Buck*, Nord Davis writes:

In 1763, Benjamin Franklin, a patriot who spoke too frankly, was in England and approached by a Rothschild banker who asked him the reason for the prosperity of the colonies. Franklin replied: "That is simple. In the Colonies we issue our own money called colonial scrip. We issue it in proportion to the demands of trade and industry."

It didn't take long for the Rothschilds to react to that bit of information. In 1764, the Rothschild Bank of England used its influence on the Crown of England to have a Law passed which prohibited the American colonies from issuing their own temporary legal tender scrip and making it compulsory for the colonies to obtain all their currency at interest from the Bank of England.

Our American forefathers were obliged to surrender their colonial scrip and then to mortgage their colonial assets and securities to the Bank of England just to borrow the money to carry on business. According to Franklin:

"One year the conditions were so reversed that the era of Prosperity ended, and a depression set in, to such an extent that the streets were filled with unemployed. The Bank of England refused to give more than 50% of the face value of the scrip when turned over as required by law. The circulating medium was thus cut in half..."

The famous lexicographer, Daniel Webster, issued the following warning:

Of all contrivances for cheating the laboring classes of mankind, none has been more effective than that which deludes them with paper money.

Quoting from *Economic Solutions* by Peter Kershaw:

The Founding Fathers of this great land had no difficulty whatsoever understanding the agenda of bankers, and they frequently referred to them and their kind as, quote, 'friends of paper money.'

They hated the Bank of England, in particular, and felt that even were we successful in winning our independence from England and King George, we could never truly be a nation of freemen unless we had an honest money system.

John Adams wrote in a letter to Thomas Jefferson in 1787:

All the perplexities, confusion and distress in America rise, not from defects in their Constitution or Confederation, not from want of honor or virtue, so much as from downright ignorance of the nature of coin, credit, and circulation.

The founders emblazoned their clear understanding of the necessity of a stable commodity money in the form of gold and silver by explicitly stating in the Constitution under Article 1, Section 8 that the federal government may "coin money" and "regulate the value thereof" and under Article 1, Section 10, that the States are forbidden..forbidden, mind you, to "make any thing but gold and silver coin a tender in payment of debts."

Author Byron Dale in his book ***Bashed By the Bankers***, writes:

During the years immediately preceding adoption of the Constitution, mobs drove our Congress from Philadelphia into New Jersey and shot up the courthouses in Massachusetts. These events were illustrative of the general situation existing throughout the country with respect to Law and order. Money was worth anywhere from two and a half cents on the dollar down to nothing. Credit was ruined, trade paralyzed and discipline at a low ebb. Anarchy, bankruptcy and confusion prevailed.

On February 3, 1787, George Washington wrote to Henry Knox as follows:

If any..person had told me that there would have been such formidable rebellion as exists, I would have thought him a ...fit subject for a mad house.

Washington then wrote several letters over the next few years in which he said that if anyone had predicted the stunningly fast and enormous improvements in the economy brought about by the gold clause in the Constitution:

"...it would have been considered a species of madness."

Three short years after the Constitution had been written and ratified and the new government set up, Washington wrote on June 3, 1790 to the Marquis de LaFayette:

You have doubtless been informed...of the happy progress of our affairs...our revenues have been considerably more productive than it was imagined they would be.

On July 19, 1791, Washington wrote to Catherine Macauloy Graham, saying:

The United States enjoys a scene of prosperity and tranquility under the new government that could hardly have been hoped for.

On December 16, 1789, the Pennsylvania Gazette wrote:

Since the federal constitution has removed all danger of our having paper tender, our trade is advanced fifty percent...

With sound, commodity money restored and paper eliminated, the United States was enjoying "prosperity" and "tranquility." So has the wisdom of the Founders ultimately prevailed in absolutely preventing paper currency from ever again appearing here in America?

7.12.8.5 President Thomas Jefferson: Foe of Paper Money

In 1791, Congress passed a Law chartering the Bank of the United States. The bill was drafted by Alexander Hamilton, a monarchist, and then Secretary of the Treasury. It was opposed by Secretary of State, Thomas Jefferson who claimed it was unconstitutional and created a powerful agency for the monopoly of money.

After a long debate, Congress passed the bill establishing a twenty-year charter for the first United States Bank. It was not owned by the United States government, but by the private individuals who owned stock in the bank, many of whom lived in England and also owned stock in the Bank of England.

In 1802, Thomas Jefferson wrote in a letter to then Secretary of Treasury Albert Gallatin:

If the American people ever allow private banks to control the issue of their currency, first by inflation and then by deflation, the banks and corporations that will grow up around them will deprive the people of all property until their children will wake up homeless on the continent their fathers conquered.

Mr. Jefferson also warned:

I believe that banking institutions are more dangerous to our liberties than standing armies...the issuing of power should be taken from the banks and restored to the people to whom it properly belongs.

In 1892, a bill came before Congress to renew the charter which was to expire in 1811. During consideration of the bill, Mr. Porter, a member of Congress, stated that it would:

Plant in the bosom of the Constitution a viper which...will sting the liberties of this country to the heart.

Mr. Wright said: "The charter is a cancer upon the body politic."

Mr. Boyd stated: "The bank is a great swindle."

The bill was killed.

7.12.8.6 Wealth confiscation through inflation

Kenneth Gerbino, former chairman of the American Economic Council stated:

Historically, the United States has been a hard money country. Only [since 1913] has the United States operated on a fiat money system. During this period, paper money has depreciated over 87%. During the preceding 140 year period, the hard currency of the United States had actually maintained its value. Wholesale prices in 1913...were the same as in 1787."

Quoting from *The Creature From Jekyll Island*, author G. Edward Griffin writes:

Inflation has now been institutionalized at a fairly constant 5% per year. This has been scientifically determined to be the optimum level for generating the most revenue without causing public alarm.

A 5% devaluation applies, not only to the money earned this year, but to all that is left over from previous years. At the end of the first year, a dollar is worth 95 cents. At the end of the second year, the 95 cents is reduced again by 5%, leaving its worth at 90 cents, and so on. By the time a person has worked 20 years, the government will have confiscated 64% of every dollar he saved over those years. By the time he has worked 45 years, the hidden tax will be 90%.

The government will take virtually everything a person saves over a lifetime.

In 1920, at the conclusion of World War I, noted economist John Maynard Keynes stated in his book *The Economic Consequences of the Peace*:

By a continuing process of inflation, governments can confiscate secretly and unobserved, an important part of the wealth of their citizens. There is no subtler, no surer means of overturning the existing basis of society than to debauch the currency.

The process engages all the hidden forces of economic Law on the side of destruction, and does it in a manner which not one man in a million is able to diagnose.

In that same book, Keynes also wrote:

If governments should refrain from regulation...the worthlessness of the money becomes apparent and the fraud upon the public can be concealed no longer.

In 1946, a postage stamp cost 3 cents, a one pound loaf of bread 10 cents, a quart of milk 18 cents, a gallon of gas 21 cents, an average new home \$12,638, and the average new car \$1,649. Compare those prices to today's costs for the same items.

Today's Federal Reserve Note will purchase less than 10 cents of what it would buy as recently as 1940. Workers earn more today than in the 40's, but their salaries have not kept up with inflation. There fore, the average American is slipping further and further toward poverty.

In 1946, a man could easily support his family with just one job. Today, it is the norm for both parents to be forced to work at least one job each just to make ends meet.

Have you ever stopped to think that this massive inflation has literally stolen trillions of dollars of America's wealth and productivity over the course of just a few generations? It may well be the most insidious tax ever collected.

7.12.8.7 The Most Dangerous Man in the Mid South¹⁰¹

(from the 2/97 Chronicles, the American Culture Magazine)

By Franklin Sanders

¹⁰¹ http://www.the-moneychanger.com/html/a_dangerous_man.html. Frank Sanders.

Almost 30 years ago, just a few weeks before I got married, on a drugstore bookstand I found a strange book: *Capitalism, the Unknown Ideal*. It was a collection of essays about a philosophy of freedom. Two dealt with the American monetary system. The author explained that nothing -- no gold or silver -- backed our currency. He argued that sooner or later, this fiat money system would lead to disaster, and that only a money backed by real value -- gold -- could last.

That author was Alan Greenspan.

Since then our careers -- Alan's and mine -- have taken very different paths.

In 1967, Alan Greenspan was already a fairly well known economic consultant. In the 1970s, President Ford appointed him to his Council of Economic Advisors. In 1987, Alan Greenspan was appointed Chairman of the Federal Reserve Board of Governors.

Funny, he doesn't talk much about gold anymore.

In 1967, I was a college senior. Susan and I were married on December 16th, and when I graduated in 1968 the draft board gave me 30 days' to frolic before conscription. I arrived at Fort Polk, Louisiana one hot October night, caught the Army bus out to the post and sat down behind the driver, facing across the bus. I opened my copy of *Aristotle's Works* and began reading.

I noticed I was the only man on board with hair. The fellow sitting across from me asked, "Whatcha reading?" Wordlessly, I flipped up the book so he could read the title on the spine. "Boy, he said without any reflection. "Have you come to the wrong place."

In 1969 I retired from the Army to attend graduate school in German at Tulane University. The next year I received a full scholarship to the Free University in West Berlin, where I saw first hand what unchallenged state power could do. The West was pulsing with life and light, the East dead and empty. In the Museum of the Wall at Checkpoint Charlie I read the last radio message from the Free Hungarians in 1956: "Tell Europe we are dying for them."

After Susan and I came home late in 1973 I worked in several businesses, learning first hand what it means to "make your way in the world." I kept studying economics and monetary systems, on my own and in graduate classes.

In 1980 I opened my own business in West Memphis, Arkansas, across the Mississippi from Memphis, selling physical gold and silver. First thing I did was write to the Arkansas Attorney General to explain that I thought exchanges of gold and silver money for paper money weren't subject to the sales tax, since they were exchanges of money for money. What was his official position?

He never bothered to answer my certified letter. Or the second. Or the third.

When he finally responded, it was only to say he wouldn't answer. I wrote to the Commissioner of Revenue, and told him what I was doing. Nobody ever bothered to answer that certified letter either, so I reported all my sales as "exempt". Every month.

A year later, in 1981, a Revenue officer showed up to audit my books. I told her what I did wasn't taxable, and that every trade contract contained a confidentiality guarantee to my customer. She could see them if she would indemnify me in case some customer sued for breach of contract. Alas, she

didn't want to co-operate, so she just multiplied all my "exempt" sales by the sales tax percentage, added penalties and interest, and sent me a bill for about \$30,000.

Thus began my merry pilgrimage through the courts. I had landed smack in the middle of Legal Never-Neverland: monetary law. Of course Article I, Section 10 of the U.S. Constitution says, "No State shall make any Thing but Gold and Silver Coin a tender in payment of debt." Of course the definition of "money" at the head of the Arkansas tax title says, "The term `money' or `monies' shall be had to mean and include gold and silver coin." Of course the U.S. Code at Title 12, Section 152 says that "lawful money" means gold and silver coin of the United States.

Of course, of course, of course . . . it goes on and on. State and federal constitutions, state and federal statutes, state and federal court decisions, US supreme court decisions, all speak with one voice: gold and silver coin are money, bank notes are not money. But whether I raised the issue in a Revenue Department administrative court, chancery court, or federal district court, I ran into the same terrified reaction. "The monetary emperor is naked! Federal Reserve notes aren't really money! Quick, rule against this clown and drag him out of here!"

I appealed the agent's assessment, and lost at the administrative level. Then at the administrative court, too. I appealed to chancery court. Had a trial. Lost there, too. By then it was December, 1983, and I received a letter from the Arkansas Revenue Department demanding I fork over \$120,000!

A few days later two deputies came to collect their "judgment." Through several well-nigh miraculous providences, they got nothing. That night, I decamped from Arkansas. I was so amazed at God's protection through this event that I wrote a friend a long letter about it. Remember that letter.

I moved my business to Tennessee, doing exactly the same thing, exchanging gold and silver money for federal reserve notes. By this time I had realized that although every American had a constitutional and legal right to gold and silver money, the problem was, you couldn't use them in everyday business. We had the right to sound money, but no means. We needed an interface between the paper system and gold and silver.

So in May, 1984 I opened a gold and silver bank. It attracted depositors like wildfire, but somebody didn't like my idea. On June 18, 1985, two IRS Criminal Investigation Division (CID) agents popped in to announce that I was under criminal investigation. ["Surprise! We just dropped by to pull out your fingernails with pliers!"].

In the next three years IRS treated me to the full court press. They got my bank records, and on US attorney's stationery wrote all my customers, demanding that they send records from their dealings with me to the IRS CID agent and threatening the recalcitrant with subpoenas. These letters remarkably chilled my customers' enthusiasm. It got harder and harder to make a living.

On September 18, 1986, five agents from the Tennessee Revenue Department appeared at my office with a search warrant, pawed my files and records for two hours, and hauled off boxes of personal papers. That was the first -- and last -- I heard of them for a long time. They immediately turned over my papers to the IRS.

In the spring of 1988 the IRS and the US Attorney's office leap-frogged their investigation from me to my church. There was nothing unusual about the church. It wasn't a "tax protest" church, just a member congregation of the conservative Presbyterian Church in America. The assistant US attorney

subpoenaed church members before the grand jury and grilled them about what the church taught. Did the pastor teach people how to not file income tax returns? Did the church have militia practice in the woods? Survival training? Did the church hand back contributions under the table? About the only thing they didn't accuse us of was trafficking in nuclear warheads.

We landed in the Catch 22 maelstrom of official suspicion. The more the pastor and the elders proved to the US attorney's office that these accusations were lies, the more convinced they became that we were such clever conspirators that their suspicions must be true. The assistant US attorney issued a subpoena to the church for all her records: counseling, sessional, financial, everything. The session of the church offered to consider any request for specific documents, but refused to open the Bride of Christ up to a fishing expedition.

On January 9, 1990, just at dawn, the IRS struck. Although the agent investigating me knew very well that I was not violent, IRS agents and Tennessee Revenue Department agents roared in my driveway while the SWAT team in their black ninja suits poured out of the woods on either side of my house.

They attacked with reckless, malicious disregard for the safety of my wife and seven (7) children. All they needed to do was pick up the phone and tell me I had been indicted, and I would have gone downtown. No, these IRS thugs wanted headlines from a sensational "pre-dawn raid" to scare the sheep for tax season, and to make me and my wife, the mother of my seven children, look violent and dangerous.

After they arrested me and Susan, the IRS refused to leave my home. Contrary to the law and over the protest of my spunky 15 year old daughter, Liberty, three IRS agents stayed and held my children hostage until the end of the day. They were waiting for a search warrant so they could come back and steal my records and my computer.

On the ride downtown I had no idea what was going on. Why would they arrest Susan? She had never done anything other than minor secretarial work in my business, and spent all her waking hours home-schooling and raising children.

When I stepped into the jail cell, I began to understand. They had indicted her to blackmail me. My friends, customers of the gold and silver bank, and numerous church members were already there, including my pastor and assistant pastor. The indictment was an inch thick. In 72 pages it charged 26 defendants with conspiracy to defraud the government, willful failure to file, and divers other malefactions.

The government claimed that the gold and silver bank was a tax evasion scheme to hide income. Not even two years in the US Army had prepared me for stupidity of this magnitude. How could we hide income when almost everything we took in was in checks, and we deposited the checks into our bank account? Oh, yes, we did pass some of the checks along to other dealers to pay for gold or silver we bought for them, a common practice in the industry and perfectly legal. This, the government taught us, was "laundering checks," a sinister activity proving we were up to no good. But every bank deposit I had made was a count on the indictment! And Susan -- poor home-making, home-schooling, never-stop-running Susan -- was the Number Two conspirator, right after me!

My bond was set at \$150,000, fully secured. For comparison, that same day they arrested a child molester and set his bond at \$10,000, not secured. I stayed in jail from Tuesday until Friday, when my

parents put up their house to get me out of jail. When the Federal marshals released me at 5:00 p.m., sheriff's deputies were waiting to arrest me, and me alone, on state charges.

I believe but cannot yet prove that an ex-IRS agent had been sent to work for the Tennessee revenue department to get the search warrant IRS couldn't get, and to figure out some way to charge me under state law. (You're not paranoid if somebody is really persecuting you.) I was charged with violating a statute that had been on the books nineteen years: TCA 67-1-1440(d), "delaying and depriving the state of revenue to which it was lawfully entitled at the time it was lawfully entitled thereto." In all those 19 years, not a single Tennessean had discovered how to violate it, but I had. Truth to tell, I hadn't even figured it out, since I was accused of "delaying & depriving" the state of revenue the amount of which was unknown and to which the state had never become lawfully entitled. They accused me of a crime I could not possibly have committed because I didn't know it existed. Never mind, due process just slows things down

They were charging me with not collecting sales tax on exchanges of gold and silver money for paper money. You know -- like when you go to the bank, and give the teller a twenty and she gives you back a ten and two fives, less sales tax. What? She doesn't charge you sales tax? Of course not, because it's an exchange of money for money.

But neither the state of Tennessee nor any other state can admit that gold and silver coin are money. If they do, they will admit they are operating outside the law. The monetary emperor is naked, and state officials from the Chief Justice of the supreme court to the governor to the second assistant tire checker are afraid to tell him. They should be afraid, because the monopoly on money creation is the jugular vein of the American fascist state.

But in January, 1990, I didn't have time to worry about state charges. Susan and I were both facing 19 years in jail if convicted in federal court. We knew the statistics, too. Humanly speaking, we had no chance. Ninety-eight percent of federal tax prosecutions end in guilty verdicts.

The next year and a half was a wretched struggle to persevere without despair. Only a survivor of a criminal prosecution could understand how it hammers your soul. Most defendants never make it to trial. Through the investigation alone, federal agents and prosecutors can destroy their businesses and their families, and break their spirit. Stripped of business, money, family, and hope, most plead guilty just to end the nightmare. In our case one poor defendant pled guilty with no idea what it meant. When a defense attorney asked him who he had conspired with, he screwed up his face in confusion and paused several minutes. "I dunno. Myself, I guess!"

Our trial began on February 26, 1991, over a year after our arrest. Right after the noon break that first day, I received word that our sons Wright (10) and Christian (8) had been severely burned playing with gasoline. Susan spent the first two weeks of trial with them in the hospital.

Just when it seemed that things couldn't get worse, they did. Day after day I had to listen as the prosecutor hatefully twisted everything I had ever done into something evil -- including the good things. This went on for four and a half long months. The government entered immaterial documents by the hundredweight.

The vast but tediously shallow silliness of the whole farce made me the maddest. Do you remember in C.S. Lewis' *Perelandra*, when the Unman is struggling to convince the Green Lady to disobey Maleldil's command not to spend the night on the land? Ransom notes with dismay the childish

silliness of evil. Throughout the night while the Green Lady sleeps, the Unman repeats, "Ransom? Ransom?" When Ransom answers, "What?", the Unman responds, "Nothing." At its depths, evil is not noble or grand. It's merely a silly, spoiled child, flicking boogers at his betters.

To the charges of "willful failure to file income tax returns" we argued that no statute makes anyone liable for an income tax (except "foreign withholding agents"). No one -- not the federal district court judge, not the assistant US attorney, not the IRS, no one -- was able to point out that statute, because it doesn't exist.

Here was a "man bites dog" story if ever there was one, but was the local media interested? Hardly. The first day of trial was covered by an old reporter for the Commercial Appeal who with great insight described issues and characters. Next day he was yanked off the case and replaced with a Stalinist "comrade" who loyally published whatever official line the US attorney's office gave him.

But our jury was more open-minded. On July 9, 1991, the jury returned its verdict: seventeen defendants not guilty on all counts! To God be the glory! We threw an enormous party and that Sunday had one bodacious worship service.

I still had to face a state trial. I no more than caught my breath when I had to dive back down into the sewage of the "justice system."

The trial started in May, 1992, and lasted three weeks. The judge and the prosecution did their best to keep out my evidence -- evidence that showed how many hundreds of hours I had haunted the law library to study out my position and make sure I was right.

It did little good. Remember the letter I wrote a friend when I escaped from Arkansas? The Revenue Department had seized it in 1986, and the prosecutrix used it to make me look like a hypocrite.

Even at that, three jurors held out for three days. I later talked to one of the holdouts, and he said that one of the women who gave up said, "Oh, well, he'll get another trial on appeal." Can people really be that ignorant, or will they just use any excuse to justify their own cowardice? On May 18, 1992 I was convicted on two counts of "delaying and depriving."

A month later the judge sentenced me to two years in jail, but he suspended all but 30 days, provided I would pay \$1,000 a month for 73 months as "restitution" and do 1,000 hours (half a year's work) of community service. With seven children to support, it was a deal I couldn't refuse.

I appealed. In August, 1994 the Court of Criminal Appeals overturned one count of the conviction for double jeopardy. I couldn't be guilty of one count of "delaying" and one count of "depriving" for the very same conduct. On the money issue, however, the real heart of the case, the court dodged and denied all my arguments.

We appealed to the Tennessee Supreme Court, and they heard the case on All Saints Day, 1995. Dr. Edwin Vieira, Jr., constitutional attorney and America's foremost expert on monetary law, prepared the briefs and argued the case. For over 6 months we heard nothing. Then on May 28, 1996 the Supreme Court affirmed my conviction, once again dodging the money issue.

I am still appealing, this time into the federal system, but the appeal couldn't be filed quickly enough to prevent my arrest on June 28, 1996. The petition for habeas corpus in federal district court was

assigned to the same judge who had tried our federal case. She took jurisdiction of the appeal, but refused to order my release. From June 28th until July 23rd, I was a guest of the Shelby County Jail and the Shelby County Penal Farm.

The next hurdle is securing a stay of execution on the \$72,000 fine. Failing that, I go back to jail for another eleven months while the appeal goes on.

Why keep on fighting? After 15 years, why not just put down the load and forget it?

Because the fiat money system is both the strength and weakness of America's tyrants. It bleeds the people's wealth and labor, but it also threatens to collapse under its own weight -- or whenever the scales fall off the people's eyes. With its green engravings of famous Americans, electrons whirling around in bank computers, and loans created out of thin air, it is one vast confidence game. As long as the people believe they can't see the emperor's naked pink flesh, his power and dignity will be preserved. But let one little boy hollers, "Hey, he's nekkid!" and the tyranny collapses.

I didn't sally forth looking for dragons to slay. The dragon came to me. He came with a lie, and either you oppose a lie, or you become a liar. You can kid yourself and say I'm only going along because they have all the guns, but day by day, year by year, your integrity erodes. Finally, you become like the tyrants: just one more liar.

Even if you have no chance to win, you have to fight. Not many are willing, but even a few keep the tyrants from sleeping at night. If we don't fight, how many more Ruby Ridges and Wacos will there be? How many more SWAT team attacks? How many more police check points? How many more bureaucrats watching your bank account and your finances? How many more children held hostage by IRS agents? The bill of rights is already dead. Will it be time to fight when your wife and children are dead, too?

The US government spent millions of dollars trying to jail me and my wife and my pastor and assistant pastor. The assistant US attorney here told one lawyer that I was "the most dangerous man in the mid-South." In a four and a half year investigation the government spent \$5 - \$10 million, maybe more. We heard they spent nearly two million on the trial alone.

We can't both be right. Either the government is right and gold and silver coin is not money, or I am right. This is not a gentlemen's "difference of opinion."

If I'm right, and if I win in the courts, then no state will ever be able to charge sales tax on gold and silver coin again. The greatest disability to free trade in gold and silver will have been removed. We will have broken down the last illegal roadblock to sound metallic money.

Postscript: Because the conditions of probation were so burdensome on him and his family, Mr. Sanders returned to jail and was relocated to a medium-security prison on November 4, 1996. He was released on December 20, 1996.

7.12.9 The Federal Reserve

7.12.9.1 The Federal Reserve System Explained¹⁰²

The Federal Reserve System, America's new private, central bank, was modeled almost precisely after the Rothschilds' Bank of England and German's Reichsbank, the central bank which controlled money and credit in Germany, and whose principal stockholders were members of the Warburg family.

In *Billions For the Bankers, Debts For the People*, author Sheldon Emery writes:

"An economic conquest takes place when nations are placed under 'tribute' without the use of visual force, so that victims do not realize that they've been conquered. The conquest begins when the conquerors gain control of the monetary system of the nation.

The conquerors do not want to arouse suspicion, so they make gradual changes to their benefit. They slowly usurp financial assets of a nation. Tribute is collected from them in the form of 'legal' debts and taxes, which the people are led to believe is for their own good...although this method is much slower than a military conquest, it is longer lasting because the captives do not see any military force used against them.

The people are free to participate in the election of their rulers although the outcome is manipulated by those in control. Without realizing it, a nation is conquered. Their wealth is transferred to their captors and the conquest is complete."

The powerful European families who had backed England's losing military effort during the Revolutionary War would not patiently regain the American colony without firing a single shot. Three years after that still secret meeting, a mere handful of Senators, including none other than Senator Aldrich, rammed the Federal Reserve Act through Congress, after the opposition had already gone home for the holidays.

As author Devvy Kidd states in her booklet *Why a Bankrupt America*:

"At 6:00pm on December 23, 1913, while Congress was out of session, three Senators took it upon themselves to pass, by voice vote, the Federal Reserve Act of 1913. These three individuals handed over America's future and our economic system to a handful of private domestic individuals and foreign banking interests. Our Founding Fathers would have shouted: 'Treason!'."

President Wilson, born in 1856, just 80 years after the signing of the Declaration of Independence, was a minister's son, a former historian, an educator and the author of the 1902 work *A History of the American People* in which he extolled Lincoln's debt-free "green-backs."

As a presidential candidate the People trusted when he pledged a money and credit system free from the influence of Wall Street, President Wilson was waiting in the Oval Office for the bill and signed it into Law one hour after its passage, thereby placing the U.S. into dependent debt slavery to foreign bankers.

Senator Charles Lindbergh, Sr., father of the famous aviator, and a fierce opponent of the bill, stated after its passage, and I quote:

¹⁰² *Losing Your Illusions*, Gordon Phillips, p. 48

"This Act establishes the most gigantic trust on earth...the invisible government by the money power will [now] be legalized. The new Law will create inflation whenever the trusts want inflation. From now on, depressions will be scientifically created."

7.12.9.2 Lewis v. United States Ruling

by: Jim Townsend
Redeem Our Country (ROC) National Chairman

The Federal Reserve banks are privately owned, locally controlled, separate corporations. Who says so? In *Lewis vs. United States*, the Ninth Circuit Court says so. (1982)

Thus, after years of senators and members of the House of Representatives denying the Federal Reserve banks were privately owned, the Ninth Circuit Court has finally, officially, given the lie to the scam imposed on the people of this nation 70 years ago.

The court's decision has vast implications. Now that the bankers' hoax has been legally exposed, what impact will it have on the paper issued as Federal Reserve notes? As private bankers, it would appear they have no more right to issue and circulate their paper than does the local counterfeiter. IN fact, if one could choose between the two, the local counterfeiter would be the one chose, because he charges no interest on his paper. The Federal Reserve counterfeiter not only distributes worthless paper, he collects interest by loaning it into circulation.

The court decision has been known for more than three months, but the media has been as quiet as a mouse. Neither the printed nor electronic media has found it newsworthy, even through the ramifications will be mind boggling if the court decision stands.

Key members of the two houses of Congress were advised of the court findings, but, the public had not heard even a peep from the guardians of the public welfare. In fact, no one will admit to knowing anything about it. But they do know, and the question is, "What are they going to do about it?"

There are so many things that come to mind when one realizes the Federal Reserve banks have been operating un-Constitutionally for all these years, that it staggers the imagination. What about homes the Federal Reserve member banks have foreclosed? What about the interest the United States has been paying on foreign loans negotiated by the same private bankers? Is this not a gift of the people's funds? What about the interest the Federal Reserve banks now collect on the national debt...would that not be declared illegal under the circuit court decision?

COURT QUOTED

Below, for the benefit of our readers, we are reprinting the main part of the Ninth Circuit Court's findings:

Examining the organization and function of the Federal Reserve Banks, and applying the relevant factors, we conclude that the Reserve Banks are not federal instrumentalities for purposed of the FTCA, but are independent, privately owned and locally controlled corporations.

Each Federal Reserve Bank is a separate corporation owned by commercial banks in its region. The stockholding commercial banks elect two thirds of each Bank's nine member board of directors. The remaining three directors are appointed but the Federal Reserve Board regulates the Reserve Banks, but direct supervision and control of each Bank is exercised by its board of directors. See 12 U.S.C. §301. The directors enact bylaws regulating the manner of conducting general Bank business, 12 U.S.C. §341, and appoint officers to implement and supervise daily Bank activities. These activities include collecting and clearing checks, making advances to private and commercial entities, holding reserves for member banks, discounting the notes of member banks, and buying and selling securities on the open market. See 12 U.S.C. §341-361.

Each Bank is statutorily empowered to conduct these activities without day to day direction from the federal government. Thus, for example, the interest rates on advances to member banks, individuals, partnerships, and corporations are set by each Reserve Bank and their decisions regarding the purchase and sale of securities are likewise independently made.

It is evident from the legislative history of the Federal Reserve Act that Congress did not intend to give the federal government direction over the daily operation of the Reserve Banks.

It is proposed that the Government shall retain sufficient power over the reserve banks to enable it to exercise a direct authority when necessary to do so, but that it shall in no way attempt to carry on through its own mechanism the routine operations and banking which require detailed knowledge of local and individual credit and which determine the funds of the community in any given instance. IN other words, the reserve-bank plan retains to the Government power over the exercise of the broader banking functions, while it leaves to individuals and privately owned institutions the actual direction of routine"--H.R. Report No. 69, 63 Cong. 1st Sess. 18-19 (1913)

The fact that the federal reserve Board regulates the Reserve Banks does not make them federal agencies under the Act. In United States v. Orleans, 425 U.S. 807, 96 S.Ct. 1971, 48 L.Ed.2d. 390 (1976), the Supreme Court held that a community action agency was organized under federal regulations and heavily funded by the federal government. Because the agency's day to day operation was not supervised by the federal government, but by local officials, the Court refused to extend federal tort liability for negligence of the agency's employees. Similarly, the Federal Reserve Banks, through heavily regulated, are locally controlled by their member banks. Unlike typical federal agencies, each bank is empowered to hire and fire employees at will. Bank employees do not participate in the Civil Service Retirement System. They are covered by worker's compensation insurance, purchased by the Bank, rather than the Federal Employees Compensation Act. Employees traveling on Bank business are not subject to federal travel regulations and to not receive government employee discounts on lodgings and services.

(The FTCA is the Federal Tort Claims Act)

There you have it. The highbinding, swindling Federal Reserve banks are just what we have for years said they were, private corporations, which have bankrupted the nation (SPOTLIGHT, July 30, 1979 and others). We now owe a bigger debt than the total net worth of the country. We pay this privileged and pampered class of counterfeiters almost 20 cents of every tax dollar collected--and it's going up.

END FOOLISHNESS

As Thomas Edison said. "It's foolish to say we can issue a bond that is good, but not a dollar bill." The time has come to return to a Constitutional money system that puts into circulation a debt-free dollar. Debt-free money would save the Social Security System, and put the 14 million unemployed workers back to work. Send your congressman a copy of the Ninth Circuit Court's decision and ask him what he is going to do about this private banking system. If he's for keeping it, you'll know what to do about him the next time you go to the polls.

(The SPOTLIGHT and the "National Educator" are the only two papers to carry this sensational information. Were it not for a tiny handful of such populist newspapers, who would tell you the truth? As H.L. Mencken once said, "I feel sorry for the man who, after reading the daily newspaper, goes to bed believing he knows something of what's going on in the world.")

7.12.9.3 Federal Reserve Never Audited¹⁰³

The fed has never to this day been audited by the General Accounting Office. Why not? Because Congress doesn't have the power to audit it, and they know it.

In July 1996, a Senate oversight committee chaired by Alphonse D'Amato examined the Federal Reserve System for the first time, noting a few discrepancies but totally avoiding and ignoring any meaningful examination of the fiat creation of our money.

The *National Educator* in its August-September 1996 issue states:

At the request of two U.S. Senators, the government Accounting Office has just completed a study of the Federal Reserve System...the revealing study explains that the reason the Fed was created was 'to furnish an elastic currency', so that, in essence, the value of the money can be changed. This defrauds the American people just as deliberately as if the government changed a foot to ten inches or a pound to fourteen ounces. When a businessman deliberately cheats his customers, he is called a criminal. Not so with the network of power inside brokers who use the Federal Reserve Banks to inflate the dollar with elastic currency.

For example, a \$20,000 wage earner in 1980 would have had to earn \$34,000 in 1990 just to stay even. In just the last six years, the Federal Reserve Note has lost approximately 20 percent of its purchasing power.

The GAO report states that the Federal Reserve Banks are not owned by the federal government as many Americans believe but are actually owned by privately held banks and a few wealthy individuals. According to the GAO reports, the Fed profits go to the privately held banks. IN 1993, at our requires, a senior congressional staffer made an official request to House Banking Committee Chairman Henry Gonzalez's office for a current list of the Class A stockholders of the Fed Banks. His office refused to supply the list of owners and implied that asking for such information was dangerous.

7.12.10 Debt

People and countries with debts become slaves of their debts. When there are payments on debts that need to be made, then we often aren't able to meet our immediate obligations, especially if the

¹⁰³ *Losing Your Illusions*, Gordon Phillips, p. 50.

payments or interest rates are excessive. Politicians like debt as a tool for political leverage because if they can put our country into a financial crisis or emergency by running up the debt, they can justify all kinds of unethical tactics that violate many different laws and Constitutional rights in the name of that crisis or emergency. Our whole civil framework goes out the window when there are national emergencies (read the War Powers Act of December 18, 1941, if you want more information about this, for instance), and yet a great many citizens are blissfully unaware of this fact because they have never been through a crisis situation. If you doubt this, go on the Internet and read some of the President's Executive Orders for cases of emergency and national crisis. A financial crisis caused by debt is the #1 vehicle or excuse politicians will use to create the "New World Order" in the coming years. The Federal Reserve, we predict, will be the vehicle used to institute the next depression. Recall that it was the first Great Depression which caused the people to be so willing to give up their rights and liberties for a socialistic government handout in the form of Social Security. The idea of "buying votes" using welfare and social security (socialism, in effect) was what caused President Roosevelt to be reelected three times in a row!

One of the frequent vehicles that politicians use to argue that we need to continue paying *voluntary* federal income taxes is the idea that we have all this federal debt that needs to be paid off, and that the debt keeps growing rather than shrinking. They will state that if we don't continue paying, then the credit rating of the United States would be ruined. *If ruining the credit rating of the United States is the only way to get our national leaders to be fiscally responsible, then it can't happen soon enough, as far as we are concerned, because it concerns us deeply that in a time of peace with no major wars going on, we continue to run up the national debt because that debt is a threat to our national sovereignty and our individual liberties.* Of course, these same politicians will *never* talk instead about the urgency of keeping the federal budget balanced so we don't chronically have to borrow to fund our annual expenditures, and they will oppose balanced budget amendments over the objections of the vast majority of citizens. Their concept of paying off the debt is to inflate it away by printing more money, rather than taking the noninflationary and fiscally responsible approach of simply paying it off.

For those of you who are Christians, we'd like to remind you of the following scriptures, which clearly say that borrowing is wrong because it is slavery, and that if you loan you should not charge interest to your brother but you can do so of a foreigner:

*"The rich rules over the poor, and the borrower is servant to the lender."
[Prov. 22:7]*

*"For the Lord your God will bless you just as He promised you; **you shall lend to many nations, but you shall not borrow**; you shall reign over many nations, but they shall not reign over you."
[Deut. 15:6]*

*"The Lord will open to you His good treasure, the heavens, to give the rain to your land in its season, and to bless all the work of your hand. **You shall lend to many nations, but you shall not borrow.**"
[Deut. 28:12]*

*"You shall not charge interest to your brother--interest on money or food or anything that is lent out at interest."
[Deut. 23:19]*

*"To a foreigner you may charge interest, but to your brother you shall not charge interest, that the Lord your God may bless you in all to which you set your hand in the land which you are entering to possess."
[Deut. 23:20.]*

Once again, it ought to be clear that politicians, by advocating chronic and growing public debt, are violating the above scriptures and being irresponsible in their public office. They are advocating loaning to our brother at interest and that debt becomes a tool for political leverage to be used to cause us to surrender our sovereign rights to the government and turn us all into slaves and servants of the politicians and the Federal Reserve. Thomas Jefferson put it very well in describing the evils of public debt:

*"I sincerely believe... that banking establishments are more dangerous than standing armies, and that the principle of spending money to be paid by posterity under the name of funding is but swindling futurity on a large scale."
[Thomas Jefferson to John Taylor, 1816. ME 15:23]*

*"Funding I consider as limited, rightfully, to a redemption of the debt within the lives of a majority of the generation contracting it; every generation coming equally, by the laws of the Creator of the world, to the free possession of the earth He made for their subsistence, unincumbered by their predecessors, who, like them, were but tenants for life."
[Thomas Jefferson to John Taylor, 1816. ME 15:18]*

*"[The natural right to be free of the debts of a previous generation is] a salutary curb on the spirit of war and indebtedment, which, since the modern theory of the perpetuation of debt, has drenched the earth with blood, and crushed its inhabitants under burdens ever accumulating."
[Thomas Jefferson to John Wayles Eppes, 1813. ME 13:272]*

*"We believe--or we act as if we believed--that although an individual father cannot alienate the labor of his son, the aggregate body of fathers may alienate the labor of all their sons, of their posterity, in the aggregate, and oblige them to pay for all the enterprises, just or unjust, profitable or ruinous, into which our vices, our passions or our personal interests may lead us. But I trust that this proposition needs only to be looked at by an American to be seen in its true point of view, and that we shall all consider ourselves unauthorized to saddle posterity with our debts, and morally bound to pay them ourselves; and consequently within what may be deemed the period of a generation, or the life of the majority."
[Thomas Jefferson to John Wayles Eppes, 1813. ME 13:357]*

*"It is incumbent on every generation to pay its own debts as it goes. A principle which if acted on would save one-half the wars of the world."
[Thomas Jefferson to A. L. C. Destutt de Tracy, 1820. FE 10:175]*

*To preserve [the] independence [of the people,] we must not let our rulers load us with perpetual debt. We must make our election between economy and liberty, or profusion and servitude. If we run into such debts as that we must be taxed in our meat and in our drink, in our necessaries and our comforts, in our labors and our amusements, for our callings and our creeds, as the people of England are, our people, like them, must come to labor sixteen hours in the twenty-four, give the earnings of fifteen of these to the government for their debts and daily expenses, and the sixteenth being insufficient to afford us bread, we must live, as they now do, on oatmeal and potatoes, have no time to think, no means of calling the mismanagers to account, but be glad to obtain subsistence by hiring ourselves to rivet their chains on the necks of our fellow-sufferers."
[Thomas Jefferson to Samuel Kercheval, 1816. ME 15:39]*

7.12.11 Surrendering Freedoms in the Name of “Government-Induced Crises”

Most of the damage to our constitutional liberties and freedoms over the years came during the early 1900's, and most of this damage was done in the name of one or another type of financial emergency or global conflict induced directly or indirectly by the government, which gave the government the authority to ask citizens to give up their constitutional liberties as a patriotic duty to save the country. For instance:

1. The Federal Reserve was instituted in 1913, the same year that the 16th Amendment was fraudulently ratified. Very shortly thereafter, there was a massive and deliberate contraction of the money supply by the Federal Reserve, which quickly precipitated the Great Depression of 1929. As a consequence of this crisis, Franklin D. Roosevelt outlawed holding gold and demanded that all citizens turn in all of their gold to the government at a government mandated price. Prior to that, we had been on the gold standard, where all of our currency was backed by gold held in Fort Knox, and could be redeemed directly for value in gold. This, of course, was just a trick to force everyone to accept paper money, which further expanded the power of the government, because the Department of the Treasury was the only organization in the country that could print this money. Once the government could get people using paper money, they could manufacture money out of thin air and deficit spend like crazy by printing more money! They could also use the money they printed to buy votes in favor of more socialism by instituting welfare and entitlement programs that would endear people to the expansion of government programs and the eventual income taxes needed to pay for them.
2. In the midst of the Great Depression starting in 1929, when people were watching their family members starving and suffering and out of work, the government stepped in again in 1935 with the Social Security program, which was “voluntary”. You had to apply for a “number” to enroll. To keep the courts from fighting against his social reforms, Franklin D. Roosevelt stacked the Supreme Court, which is to say that he doubled its size with his own set of “cronies” so that no challenges to his social programs in court would win. He knew he could get away with this supposedly because the constitution didn't specify how many justices were on the Supreme Court. The majority of people were suffering with the depression so most people were willing to go in and get a Social Security Number so they could get a free handout from the government at a time when they needed it most. Of course, the government never would have been able to afford to give everyone this kind of handout if they hadn't eliminated gold and forced everyone to accept paper money only a few years earlier at the start of the Great Depression. The expansion of government power at this time in American history was unprecedented.
3. During World War II, the U.S. Congress instituted a *voluntary* income tax called the “Victory Tax”, which incidentally still is mentioned to this day in the Internal Revenue Code (26 U.S. Code). People were told by the government that it was their patriotic duty to pay income taxes to finance the war. The tax was intended to finance the war, and included employer withholding participation. This tax was the precursor to the income tax we have today. Unfortunately, the tax was repealed after the war but citizens were never told about it. Why?...because we had to pay off the war debt! Our country has remained in perpetual debt ever since, presumably as a justification for continuing the income tax! As long as Congress continues to deficit spend in a time of peace and not focus on paying down the national debt, then there will always be a justification for demagogery about why we need to continue the income tax.

4. Congress passed a bill called the War Powers Act in December 18, 1941, which gives them the right to do virtually anything they want with you or your property in the name of defending the country. It was instituted during World War II.
5. The President of the United States is authorized to execute Executive Orders. Every new president who comes along adds to the long list of Executive Orders already in place. Very seldom are these orders ever repealed. Have you ever looked through the long series of executive orders signed by each president that even to this day are still in effect? Reading these orders is truly frightening! Many of them list what happens mainly during national emergencies. It is of great concern reading these orders to think just how many of our freedoms can be taken away very easily and quickly in the event of national emergencies!

7.12.12 Judicial Tyranny

Judicial tyranny is what allows corruption in the government to flourish and grow, because judicial tyranny protects wrongdoing by public servants throughout the government. Judicial tyranny is the most pervasive and necessary type of tyranny in order for tyranny elsewhere in the government to exist because:

- It protects judges from being prosecuted for treason and conspiracy against rights by persons who have been injured by government wrongdoing.
- It facilitates the official cover-up of government wrongdoing by using protective orders, nonpublication of cases, and suppression of incriminating evidence against government wrongdoing
- It screens juries to ensure only biased jurists hear cases and rule in the government's favor, when there is a jury trial.
- Allows corrupt judges to dismiss cases before they are heard, so that discovery of the wrongdoing can never occur.
- Courts punish and persecute attorneys who try to prosecute government officials or agencies for wrongdoing by pulling their license to practice law.
- Courts cannot pull licenses of pro per litigants, they will frequently penalize them for "frivolous pleadings" using frivolous penalties or they also grant motions to strike pleadings by the government so that pro per litigants are left with nothing to argue.

The above types of evil are the worst types of tyranny found anywhere in the government, because the collective net affect of them has a very repressive affect on society. Thomas Jefferson warned us that our federal judiciary would get out of control when he made the following statements about the federal judiciary:

*"Contrary to all correct example, [the Federal judiciary] are in the habit of going out of the question before them, to throw an anchor ahead and grapple further hold for future advances of power. **They are then in fact the corps of sappers and miners, steadily working to undermine the independent rights of the States and to consolidate all power in the hands of that government in which they have so important a freehold estate.**"*

[Thomas Jefferson: Autobiography, 1821. ME 1:121]

*"We all know that permanent judges acquire an esprit de corps; that, being known, **they are liable to be tempted by bribery; that they are misled by favor, by relationship, by a spirit of party, by a devotion to the executive or legislative;** that it is better to leave a cause to the decision of cross and pile than to that of a judge biased to one side; and that the opinion of twelve honest jurymen gives still a better hope of right than cross and pile does."*

[Thomas Jefferson to Abbe Arnoux, 1789. ME 7:423, Papers 15:283]

"It is not enough that honest men are appointed judges. All know the influence of interest on the mind of man, and how unconsciously his judgment is warped by that influence. To this bias add that of the esprit de corps, of their peculiar maxim and creed that 'it is the office of a good judge to enlarge his jurisdiction,' and the absence of responsibility, and how can we expect impartial decision between the General government, of which they are themselves so eminent a part, and an individual state from which they have nothing to hope or fear?"

[Thomas Jefferson: Autobiography, 1821. ME 1:121]

"At the establishment of our Constitutions, the judiciary bodies were supposed to be the most helpless and harmless members of the government. Experience, however, soon showed in what way they were to become the most dangerous; that the insufficiency of the means provided for their removal gave them a freehold and irresponsibility in office; that their decisions, seeming to concern individual suitors only, pass silent and unheeded by the public at large; that these decisions nevertheless become law by precedent, sapping by little and little the foundations of the Constitution and working its change by construction before any one has perceived that that invisible and helpless worm has been busily employed in consuming its substance. In truth, man is not made to be trusted for life if secured against all liability to account."

[Thomas Jefferson to A. Coray, 1823. ME 15:486]

"I do not charge the judges with wilful and ill-intentioned error; but honest error must be arrested where its toleration leads to public ruin. As for the safety of society, we commit honest maniacs to Bedlam; so judges should be withdrawn from their bench whose erroneous biases are leading us to dissolution. It may, indeed, injure them in fame or in fortune; but it saves the republic, which is the first and supreme law."

[Thomas Jefferson: Autobiography, 1821. ME 1:122]

"The original error [was in] establishing a judiciary independent of the nation, and which, from the citadel of the law, can turn its guns on those they were meant to defend, and control and fashion their proceedings to its own will."

[Thomas Jefferson to John Wayles Eppes, 1807. FE 9:68]

"It is a misnomer to call a government republican in which a branch of the supreme power [the Federal Judiciary] is independent of the nation."

[Thomas Jefferson to James Pleasants, 1821. FE 10:198]

"It is left... to the juries, if they think the permanent judges are under any bias whatever in any cause, to take on themselves to judge the law as well as the fact. They never exercise this power but when they suspect partiality in the judges; and by the exercise of this power they have been the firmest bulwarks of English liberty."

[Thomas Jefferson to Abbe Arnoux, 1789. ME 7:423, Papers 15:283]

Very wise words indeed! Thomas Jefferson's warnings and predictions above were prophetic, because today we have a federal judiciary that is completely out of control with respect to income tax matters, which happens to be the area of law possessing the greatest conflict of interest universally for all federal judges, as we will explain.

We'll now examine in greater detail how judicial tyranny is perpetuated and expanded in today's federal courts to show just how far the tyranny predicted by Jefferson has taken us. The abuses and usurpations of power are very numerous but carefully concealed by most judges so that they are out of public view. Collectively, these usurpations constitute a massive conspiracy against the rights of the sovereign people that is a treasonable offense, and they also explain why:

"Absolute power corrupts absolutely."

and why the founding fathers went to such extensive means to separate sovereign powers in our government to prevent corruption and conspiracy of the kind that is commonplace today. As you read through the following subsections and witness all the antics and corruption of our judiciary, compare this with what God in His sovereignty requires of these same judges in the following scripture:

Psalm 82 [Amplified Bible]

A Psalm of Asaph.

1 GOD STANDS in the assembly [of the representatives] of God; in the midst of the magistrates or judges He gives judgment [as] among the gods.

2 How long will you [magistrates or judges] judge unjustly and show partiality to the wicked? Selah [pause, and calmly think of that]!

3 Do justice to the weak (poor) and fatherless; maintain the rights of the afflicted and needy.

4 Deliver the poor and needy; rescue them out of the hand of the wicked.

5 [The magistrates and judges] know not, neither will they understand; they walk on in the darkness [of complacent satisfaction]; all the foundations of the earth [the fundamental principles upon which rests the administration of justice] are shaking.

6 I said, You are gods [since you judge on My behalf, as My representatives]; indeed, all of you are children of the Most High.¹⁰⁴

7 But you shall die as men and fall as one of the princes.

8 Arise, O God, judge the earth! For to You belong all the nations.¹⁰⁵

After you have read this scripture, pray about it and then ask yourself the following questions:

- What can we do to punish these tyrants?
- How can we reform our corrupted system to eliminate or at least reduce such abuses?
- How can we eliminate the inherent conflict of interest that exists because judges are paid by the income tax and are beholden to the IRS if they rule against it?

Also consider that the answer cannot rely on the judges or the legal profession they come from, because they have already demonstrated that they can't be trusted and have become corrupted, mostly by the love of money.

7.12.12.1 Conflict of Interest and Bias of Federal Judges

“The king establishes the land by justice, but he who receives bribes overthrows it.”
[Prov. 29:4, Bible, NKJV]

Federal law prohibits conflict of interest or bias on the part of judges as follows:

¹⁰⁴ John 10:34-36; Rom. 13:1, 2.

¹⁰⁵ Rev. 11:15.

- [28 U.S.C. §144](#): Bias or prejudice of judge
- [28 U.S.C. §455](#): Disqualification of justice, judge, or magistrate judge

If you would like to learn what the courts think of the use of these statutes against judges, look at the link below on our website:

<http://famguardian.org/PublishedAuthors/Govt/FJC/Recusal.pdf>

When judges possess a conflict of interest, they are more likely to judge unrighteously and in favor of their selfish interest over and above the interests of justice. Below are some of the more prevalent sources of conflicts of interest:

1. Many judges believe that their pay or benefits are derived from income taxes and that if they rule against the income tax, they will harm their employer and jeopardize future pay increases. Article III section I of the Constitution prevents the salaries of judges from being reduced while in office, but their future pay increases can be reduced.
2. When a judge rules against the government's interest too often, one of two things will happen to them:
 - 2.1. They will be removed from office for bad behavior under [28 U.S.C. §44\(b\)](#).
 - 2.2. The Department of Justice will frame the judge so that he gets removed from office. There are many examples of this happening to judges, and one example is mentioned in the We The People Truth in Taxation hearings in which a judge was framed, according to Attorney Larry Becraft.
 - 2.3. They will be threatened with an IRS audit or collection action unless they cooperate. Remember that the IRS is part of the Executive branch of the government and performs a function delegated from Congress to collect taxes. The ability of the Executive branch to influence or coerce members of the judiciary using the power of the IRS becomes a financial terrorism vehicle that few judges will resist.

“In the general course of human nature, A POWER OVER A MAN’S SUSTENANCE AMOUNTS TO A POWER OVER HIS WILL.”
[Alexander Hamilton, The Federalist, No. 79]

Furthermore, it is a well established precedent that a judge whose salary can be diminished by legislation or who holds office for other than a lifetime cannot be an Article III judge who can rule on the rights or status of a person in the Union states. He can only rule on Article I or Article IV issues relating to the federal zone.

3. Most judges were lawyers at one time. In many cases, they were federal prosecutors and they have college buddies who are in private practice who they may feel inclined to help. Because of this, they are inclined to want to protect and rule in favor of their former coworker attorneys in the Department of Injustice.
4. The more litigation there is, the more prosperous it is for lawyers. One way to increase litigation is to increase injustice in the courts or to rule excessively in favor of the government, so that citizens litigating against government corruption will want to appeal to the circuit courts and run up even more legal fees. This means lawyers will make more money and the legal profession will need more lawyers, and what lawyer, whether a judge or not, wouldn't want that? Therefore, judges who were once lawyers will be inclined to want to benefit their profession and expand its power and totalitarian control and economic power over our government and the people. They do this through:
 - 4.1. Ruling in favor of the government when it would be unjust.
 - 4.2. Punishing litigants who practice law without a license granted by them.
5. We mentioned earlier in section 7.12.10 that the federal government is in deep debt and that the goal of our politicians is to spend us into a deep hole and put us into massive debt slavery to the privately owned Federal Reserve. We also mentioned that the Bible says this creates a conflict of interest:

“The rich ruleth over the poor, and the borrower [is] servant to the lender.”
[Prov. 22:7]

Federal judges know that if they rule against the illegal enforcement of income tax laws and thereby reduce federal revenues, they may threaten the solvency of their employer and cause bankruptcy, civil unrest, and chaos in our

society. By doing so, they compromise the integrity of the federal judiciary today to prevent the inevitable collapse of the communist system later.

6. Judges know that pro per or pro se litigants are the most dangerous types of litigants because they: 1. Do not economically benefit the legal profession by doing all their own litigation; 2. Have a potential to clog the courts for years because there are far more of them than there are lawyers; 3. Are more likely to bring up issues that will embarrass the government because they have no license they could lose and can be more independent and objective than most attorneys. Therefore, judges have a vested interest in sanctioning and penalizing pro per litigants in order to maintain their iron fist control over the courtroom and to ensure that only attorneys THEY license can appear in court, and these attorneys will always litigate in favor of the government or have their license pulled to practice law and starve to death. Tyranny.

All of the above conflicts of interest create severe biases and prejudices against justice in federal courtrooms all over the country and explain the irrational, tyrannical rulings relating to income tax that are so prevalent. Irwin Schiff, as a matter of fact, is famous for saying “*More crimes occur in federal courtrooms every day than anywhere else in the country!*” and we believe he is right. The only way to eliminate these conflicts of interest completely is:

- Eliminate the requirement for jurors to be “U.S. citizens”, because this creates a bias and prejudice against those who are “U.S. nationals” ONLY because the juries are not juries of peers.
- Require jury trials for all tax matters so that judges don’t have to decide the case. Currently, jury trials are *optional* but not *mandatory* under [28 U.S.C. §2402](#).
- Eliminate attorney licensing. This is a scam that does nothing but undermine our First Amendment rights of freedom of speech and our right to contract under [Article 1, Section 10, Clause 1](#) of the U.S. Constitution.
- Eliminate the ability to sanction pro per litigants under [Rule 11](#) of the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure.
- Repudiate the national debt and make it illegal for our Congressmen to borrow more money except with the consent of the voters and a three fourths vote by the Congress.
- Make judges directly accountable to the people they serve by making them *elected* by the people in their district rather than *appointed* by the President. This is the focus of the Judicial Accountability Initiative Law (J.A.I.L.), which you can read about at <http://www.jail4judges.org/>.

7.12.12.2 Sovereign and Official Immunity

Sovereign immunity is defined in Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 1396 as follows:

***Sovereign immunity.** A judicial doctrine which precludes bringing suit against the government without its consent. Founded on the ancient principle that “the King can do no wrong,” it bars holding the government or its political subdivisions liable for the torts of its officers or agents unless such immunity is expressly waived by statute or by necessary inference from legislative enactment. Maryland Port Admin. V. I.T.O. Corp. Of Baltimore, 40 Md.App. 697, 395 A.2d 145, 149. The federal government has generally waived its non-tort action immunity in the Tucker Act, 28 U.S.C.A. §1346(a)(2), 1491, and its tort immunity in the Federal Tort Claims Act, 28 U.S.C.A. §1346(b), 2674. Most states have also waived immunity in various degrees at both the state and local government levels.*

The immunity from certain suits in federal court ranted to states by the Eleventh Amendment to the United States Constitution.

This sounds reasonable on the surface, but remember that the government is NOT the king in our system of government, which is a republican democracy founded on *individual rights*. *The PEOPLE are the sovereigns and the king*, and the government exists and acts on their behalf as a *fiduciary*. The contract which limits and defines the powers of government officers as fiduciaries is the Constitution. We discussed the subject of fiduciary duty of individual government employees in detail earlier in

section 7.4.8. The supreme Court also agreed with the conclusion that the people are the sovereigns and the government servants are fiduciaries in the case of *Yick Wo v. Hopkins* in 1886:

"When we consider the nature and the theory of our institutions of government, the principles on which they are supposed to rest, and review the history of their development, we are constrained to conclude that they do not mean to leave room for the play and action of purely personal and arbitrary power. Sovereignty itself is, of course, not subject to law, for it is the author and source of law; but in our system, while sovereign powers are delegated to the agencies of government, sovereignty itself remains with the people, by whom and for whom all government exists and acts. And the law is the definition and limitation of power. It is, indeed, quite true that there must always be lodged somewhere, and in some person or body, the authority of final decision; and in many cases of mere administration, the responsibility is purely political, no appeal lying except to the ultimate tribunal of the public judgment, exercised either in the pressure of opinion, or by means of the suffrage. But the fundamental rights to life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness, considered as individual possessions, are secured by those maxims of constitutional law which are the monuments showing the victorious progress of the race in securing to men the blessings of civilization under the reign of just and equal laws, so that, in the famous language of the Massachusetts bill of rights, the government of the commonwealth 'may be a government of laws and not of men.' For the very idea that one man may be compelled to hold his life, or the means of living, or any material right essential to the enjoyment of life, at the mere will of another, seems to be intolerable in any country where freedom prevails, as being the essence of slavery itself."
[Yick Wo v. Hopkins, 118 U.S. 356 (1886)]

And later in 1884, the supreme Court repeated this doctrine again:

"There is no such thing as a power of inherent sovereignty in the government of the United States...In this country sovereignty resides in the people, and Congress can exercise no power which they have not, by their Constitution entrusted to it. All else is withheld."
[Julliard v. Greenman, 110 U.S. 421 (1884)]

Therefore, THE PEOPLE are the ones who should have sovereign immunity, and not the government but tyrannical judges try to twist this around for their personal benefit. It ought to be obvious, though, that the doctrine of sovereign immunity competes directly with the goal of the written social contract called the Constitution, which is to define and limit the delegated powers of government officers acting as fiduciaries of the people. The officers individually may be tried for their torts (injurious actions) if they are acting outside of their lawful delegated authority and so may the government they work for under the Federal Tort Claims Act, [28 U.S.C.A. §1346\(b\)](#). Here is the way one court described it:

"The doctrine of sovereign immunity, raised by defendants, is inapplicable since plaintiffs contend that the defendants' action were beyond the scope of their authority or they were acting unconstitutionally." Berends v. Butz, 357 F.Supp. 143 (1973)

However, in many cases, federal judges often will try assert sovereign immunity anyway or they will allow or encourage the government to substitute the United States as defendant when an injured party tries to civilly prosecute an individual government employee who was acting illegally. This, of course, violates common sense and principles of equity but happens quite often. When it does happen, the supreme Court says it amounts to communism!:

"... the maxim that the King can do no wrong has no place in our system of government; yet it is also true, in respect to the State itself, that whatever wrong is attempted in its name is imputable to its government and not to the State, for, as it can

Speak and act only by law, whatever it does say and do must be lawful. That which therefore is unlawful because made so by the supreme law, the Constitution of the United States, is not the word or deed of the State, but is the mere wrong and trespass of those individual persons who falsely spread and act in its name."

"This distinction is essential to the idea of constitutional government. To deny it or blot it out obliterates the line of demarcation that separates constitutional government from absolutism, free self- government based on the sovereignty of the people from that despotism, whether of the one or the many, which enables the agent of the state to declare and decree that he is the state; to say 'L'Etat, c'est moi.' Of what avail are written constitutions, whose bills of right, for the security of individual liberty, have been written too often with the blood of martyrs shed upon the battle-field and the scaffold, if their limitations and restraints upon power may be overpassed with impunity by the very agencies created and appointed to guard, defend, and enforce them; and that, too, with the sacred authority of law, not only compelling obedience, but entitled to respect? And how else can these principles of individual liberty and right be maintained, if, when violated, the judicial tribunals are forbidden to visit penalties upon individual offenders, who are the instruments of wrong, whenever they interpose the shield of the state? **The doctrine is not to be tolerated.** The whole frame and scheme of the political institutions of this country, state and federal, protest against it. Their continued existence is not compatible with it. **It is the doctrine of absolutism, pure, simple, and naked, and of communism which is its twin, the double progeny of the same evil birth.**"

[[Poindexter v. Greenhow, 114 U.S. 270; 5 S.Ct. 903 \(1885\)](#)]

Even so, it isn't unusual when a lower court such as a district or circuit court abuses a litigant by abusing sovereign immunity that when the case is appealed, the supreme Court in effect sanctions and encourages the abuse by refusing to hear the appeal or grant the case a writ of certiorari. The sin in such a case becomes an act of *omission* rather than *commission*, but it is still a sin and a wrong by any moral standard. All of this explains a rather wise comment one of our colleagues made when he said about man's law (rather than God's law):

"The first casualty of man's law is always truth and justice."

A related type of abuse occurs when the court asserts "official immunity", the purpose of which is to insulate from liability a government employee for acts done while in office, even if those acts are injurious and unlawful. We discuss this subject further in section 6.4.3.

7.12.12.3 **Cases Tried Without Jury**

Another cruel abuse that tyrannical judges impose in the courtroom is to eliminate the use of juries when it is being prosecuted civilly and is the defendant, even though the intent of the Seventh Amendment was to guarantee a jury trial for any matter over \$20. We talk about this kind of abuse later in section 6.6.2, where we say that the federal courts stole your right to a trial by jury. This is hypocrisy at its finest and the most blatant conflict of interest imaginable: putting a single judge in charge of ruling or deciding whether he should bite the hand that feeds him, which is his government employer, by ruling against it. What do you think he is going to do, especially if this very same hand that feeds him can have him removed from office for bad behavior ([28 U.S.C. §134\(a\)](#)), blacklisted, and framed by false witnesses who were secretly pressured by the DOJ and FBI? This is what the government often does to judges and even Congressmen who are honest about the fraud of the income

tax. Case in point is what happened to Congressman James Traficant from Ohio. We have the complete docket of pleadings for his case posted on our website at:

<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/CaseStudies/JamesTraficant/JamesTraficant.htm>

Here is the way one corrupt judge unethically and immorally wiggled out of the requirement for jury trials with the government as defendant:

*Taxpayers also assert they were denied their Seventh Amendment right to trial by jury before the Tax Court. **The Seventh Amendment preserves the right to jury trial "in suits at common law."** Since there was no right of action at common law against a sovereign, enforceable by jury trial or otherwise, there is no constitutional right to a jury trial in a suit against the United States. See 9 C. Wright & A. Miller, *Federal Practice & Procedure* § 2314, at 68-69 (1971). Thus, there is a right to a jury trial in actions against the United States only if a statute so provides. Congress has not so provided when the taxpayer elects not to pay the assessment and sue for a redetermination in the Tax Court. For a taxpayer to obtain a trial by jury, he must pay the tax allegedly owed and sue for a refund in district court. 28 U.S.C. §§ 2402 and 1346(a)(1). The law is therefore clear that a taxpayer who elects to bring his suit in the Tax Court has no right, statutory or constitutional, to a trial by jury. *Phillips v. Commissioner*, 283 U.S. 589, 599 n. 9, 51 S. Ct. 608, 75 L. Ed. 1289 (1931); *Wickwire v. Reinecke*, 275 U.S. 101, 105-106, 48 S. Ct. 43, 72 L. Ed. 184 (1927); *Dorl v. Commissioner*, 507 F.2d 406, 407 (2d Cir. 1974) (holding it "elementary that there is no right to a jury trial in the Tax Court.").*

[*Mathes v. Commissioner of Internal Revenue*, 576 F.2d 70, (1978)]

The above ruling does nothing but encourage irresponsibility and hypocrisy in our own government, and takes government employees out of their role as servants and fiduciaries of the sovereign people and makes them into communist tyrants, to use the words of the supreme Court, who can't be called to account for their wrongs. Treason! By natural law, the judge that made the above ruling deserves to be executed under Article III of the Constitution.

7.12.12.4 Attorney Licensing

Another area of massive conflict of interest in the courtroom that promotes injustice is the notion of attorney licensing by the same court that hears cases by the licensed attorney. What do you think a judge is going to do if the attorney that the court licensed brings a civil suit against the government or a government officer? They are going to pull his license to practice law or at least threaten to pull it if he won't withdraw his case. This is exactly what happened to the attorney who defended Congressman James Traficant of Ohio in July of 2002. She had her license pulled because Traficant was a scapegoat who they wanted to make into a public outcast by leaving him without legal representation so that he would have to defend himself in the courtroom and would be more likely to lose!

Let's think about this for a minute folks. The First Amendment guarantees us a right of free speech. The right of free speech includes the right to either *not speak* or to appoint someone else to speak for us. When we hire an attorney to speak for us, it shouldn't matter whether he is "deemed licensed" to practice law by anyone, because we are paying the money to hire him. The government and the bar association who is in bed with them uses the "magnanimous" but fraudulent and ridiculous excuse that they have to license attorneys to protect us from predators and from our own indiscriminate taste in

lawyers so that only ethical and upstanding lawyers can “practice” law. This just interferes with the rule of supply and demand and jacks up the price. The only reason to license lawyers is because:

- It restricts the supply of lawyers so that the price is jacked up, which makes legal representation unaffordable for the vast majority of individuals.
- It creates a source of additional leverage for the government when the government or its officers are prosecuted for wrongdoing.
- Because malpractice insurance companies may charge higher premiums to insure lawyers who aren’t licensed.

But remember that a license is legally defined as “permission from the state to do that which otherwise illegal”, and the implication is that it is illegal for an unlicensed attorney to talk in front of a judge or jury. Common sense tells us that this violates the First Amendment guarantee of free speech. As reasonable men, we must therefore conclude that the American Bar Association (ABA) is nothing but a lawyer union that wants to jack up its own salaries by restricting the supply of lawyers and which is in bed with federal judges to help illegally expand their jurisdiction in return for the privilege of having those inflated salaries.

The following supreme Court cases held that a State may not pass statutes prohibiting the unauthorized practice of law or to interfere with the Right to freedom of speech, secured in the First Amendment: *United Mine Workers v. Illinois Bar Association*, 389 U.S. 217, and *NAACP v. Button*, 371 U.S. 415, and also in *Brotherhood of Railroad Trainmen v. Virginia State Bar*, 377 U.S. 1 (1964).

7.12.12.5 Protective Orders

The most common thing that people want to do who know they are doing wrong is *hide the evidence*. This was true of the first sinner Eve and every human after her who sinned. The book of Genesis chapter 3, verses 6 through 19, in the Bible records that the first human to sin, Eve, after she sinned by disobeying God and eating the fruit from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, first hid her shameful nakedness with a leaf, and then hid with Adam when God approached. Sinners have been hiding the evidence ever since, and defense lawyers actually make a large part of their livelihood from being good at hiding evidence and avoiding direct or revealing answers in depositions. No doubt, we would need a LOT fewer lawyers and judges if people just told the truth and did the right thing to begin with. We must remember that a “lying tongue” is one of the seven things that God hates in Prov. 6:19. Why then would we want to violate God’s law by using man’s laws or our legal system to encourage or protect fraud by allowing for protective orders?

Jesus in the Bible repeats this same theme of the desire to hide evidence as being the hallmark of sinners and wrongdoers again in John 3:18-21:

*"He who believes in Him [Jesus, the Son of God] is not condemned ; but he who does not believe is condemned already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. **And this is the condemnation, that the light has come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.***

For everyone practicing evil hates the light and does not come to the light, lest his deeds should be exposed. *But he who does the truth comes to the light, that his deeds may be clearly seen, that they have been done in God."*

[\[John 3:18-21\]](#)

In a massive conflict of interest, judges in federal courts very often do the same thing that Eve did by conspiring with the government prosecutor (usually from the DOJ) to try to hide evidence of wrongdoing by either the government or by employees of the government. The easiest way for them to conspire in this cover-up is to grant a pre-trial motion by the Department of INjustice for a protective order, often without argument or explanation, and even as an Ex Parte emergency motion so that the opposing side doesn't even have a chance to prepare for the hearing. A protective order is an order by the court to cease certain types of discovery of evidence for use in trial. A protective order might be issued, for instance, to bar the plaintiff in a civil suit from deposing a government witness to ask him questions or it might prevent the subpoena of government documents related to the government wrongdoing. Because the protective order is issued BEFORE the trial, the truth is suppressed before the jury ever has a chance to hear it. This is what they did at Congressman Traficant's trial in July 2002, who was a vocal opponent of the IRS and the income tax.

Federal judges seldom have to even justify why they granted the order and even the fact that the order was granted is not allowed by the judge to be revealed to the jury even though it should because it constitutes evidence of massive conflict of interest and obstruction of justice. When they make the protective order, they will often tell the clerk of the court to make their comments off the record so they can't be prosecuted for doing so. When this happens, you ought to tape record it and prosecute them for conflict of interest (28 U.S.C. §455) and obstruction of justice! If the party who is wronged by the protective order then tries to prosecute the judge for wrongdoing and obstruction of justice, his license to practice law is pulled if he is an attorney. If he is a pro per litigant representing himself, he is fined by the court for submitting "frivolous pleadings" as an unethical and immoral way to silence him in violation of the First Amendment and strike (remove) his pleadings from the record so there is no evidence or argument to convict the judge with! Judges look out for each other and play golf together, you know. It's a good old boy network that MUST be eliminated if we are ever to have justice and equality of rights under the law and restore our society to the status of being a government of laws rather than men.

All of this discussion underscores the following words of wisdom:

"There can be no justice without truth."

If the judge won't allow the truth to be admitted into evidence during the trial or discussed, he is simply inviting more litigation and not allowing the issue to be resolved. This does a disservice to our justice system, undermines its credibility, and causes massive injustice against the rights and liberties of Americans everywhere. It is a treasonable offense also because it covers-up a violation of the oath of office for the judge in question. In most cases, juries decide only the facts and apply the law as given to them by the judge. But if the judge is corrupt and biased and the jury detects that the judge is involved in this kind of cover-up, then Thomas Jefferson said that the jury then has the duty to decide both the facts AND the law, and in many cases, to rule against the law as being unjust or at least rule that a different judge is needed to hear the case:

"It is left... to the juries, if they think the permanent judges are under any bias whatever in any cause, to take on themselves to judge the law as well as the fact. They never exercise this power but when they suspect partiality in the judges; and by the exercise of this power they have been the firmest bulwarks of English liberty." --
Thomas Jefferson to Abbe Arnoux, 1789. ME 7:423, Papers 15:283

7.12.12.6 "Frivolous" Penalties

The First Amendment guarantees every American the right to petition their government for Redress of Grievances/wrongs. Because this amendment creates a *right*, and because the exercise of rights cannot be legally penalized or taxed or restricted or regulated by the government, then at least theoretically, it is illegal for a judge to fine or sanction a litigant no matter what he says in his pleadings, and even if they are totally without merit! This isn't true of his GOVERNMENT LICENSED (conflict of interest!) attorney, but it is certainly true of the litigant who is represented *by* the attorney. However, in some instances, federal judges have been known to fine litigants up to \$25,000 for frivolous pleadings if they are litigating a very embarrassing issue against the government. An example of such an embarrassing issue would be the 861 source position described later in Chapter 5 or any other issue that would destroy government revenues from income taxes. Corrupt federal judges use frivolous penalties in order to:

- Protect the government or its employees from prosecution.
- Avoid having to tell the truth or rule on a "hot-potato" issue that could threaten their job
- Discourage future lawsuits on the same subject.

What often happens is the judge will sanction the attorney rather than the litigant because they can't fine the litigant, who has First Amendment rights, and of course the attorney passes on the cost to the litigant. Even if the case is a good one with legal merit and good arguments, many attorneys will refuse to take the case if they think the judge will be biased or could sanction them. This further discourages future suits on the same subject.

We must remember, however, what it means to be frivolous:

frivolous:

Of little weight or importance. A pleading is "frivolous" when it is clearly insufficient on its face and does not controvert the material points of the opposite pleading, and is presumably interposed for mere purposes of delay or to embarrass the opponent. A claim or defense is frivolous if a proponent can present no rational argument based upon the evidence or law in support of that claim or defense. Liebowitz v. Aimexco Inc., Col.App., 701 P.2d 140, 142. Frivolous pleadings may be amended to proper form or ordered stricken under federal and state rules of civil procedure."
[Blacks Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, 1990, p. 668]

Even though the pleading is rational, organized, and focused on substantive legal issues, judges will routinely try to sanction pro per litigants who are defending themselves without a lawyer. They will use the excuse that the litigant is inexperienced, incompetent, and every other type of verbally abusive but unsubstantiated rhetoric they can think of. They have to do this because pro per litigants are the most dangerous type of litigants since they:

- Don't have any legal fees, they can litigate endlessly against the government and must be discouraged from doing so.
- Aren't licensed like typical attorneys, the court can't threaten to pull their license if they don't like the subject of the suit or its adverse impact on the government.

Therefore, frivolous penalties are the most prevalent kind of violation of the First Amendment that federal judges like to use to gag pro per litigants, and especially if they are vexatious (outspoken, articulate, organized, and very combative). It's an obvious conflict of interest where the suit is against the government or one of its employees, and for that reason, it may be preferable to pursue your suit

against the government *agent* as a private person and ensure that you get a jury trial to make the ruling as unbiased as possible.

Lastly, if you are sanctioned with frivolous penalties and then try to litigate the same matter again, then tyrannical judges sometimes will increase the sanctions and justify their action by saying that the matters you litigated were already resolved. In most cases, they will not be resolved from the previous ruling because in most cases, any time you litigate matters found in this book, they will collude in the cover-up of these materials and try to use protective orders to keep you from doing complete discovery. If they had not attempted the protective order and had allowed your evidence and findings into the court record and had published that court record, then they would be correct in saying that the matters were resolved and in instituting additional sanctions, but this combination of factors seldom happens with tax honesty advocates because of the government cover-up of the truth and tyranny in maintaining their power. Remember:

“There can be no justice without truth, “

If the judge will not allow the truth or evidence of the truth to be admitted into evidence or discussed in the courtroom, then the issues you are litigating have not been resolved and no sanction should therefore be instituted unless and until the truth is fully explored, exposed, and decided upon by an impartial jury. Sometimes the judge will cite previous cases as his authority or excuse why he doesn't have to deal with your issues and say it has been decided already, but in many cases, he will cite *unpublished cases*, which doesn't expose the truth, or the case won't have explored the truth at all and he will be hoping you don't know how to do case research to discover their fraud and obstruction of justice.

7.12.12.7 Fifth Amendment Abuses

*“Constitutional privilege against self-incrimination applies to civil as well as criminal proceedings”
[McCarthy v. Arndstein, 266 U.S. 34; 45 S.Ct. 16 (1924)]*

Judges and government lawyers are aided in their abuse of our liberties by deliberate and flagrant violations of the Fifth Amendment. The Fifth Amendment says:

“No person shall be ... compelled in any criminal case to be a witness against himself,”

Fifth Amendment

What they will tell ignorant litigants opposing the government is that the Fifth Amendment only protects testimony in a *criminal* trial, not a *civil* trial such as those involving taxes. The judge will then threaten to sanction such a litigant for contempt of court if he does not testify, hoping that he will provide enough information to make the government's case. However, this approach violates the precedents of the United States supreme Court, which said on the subject:

*“The [Fifth Amendment] privilege reflects a complex of our fundamental values and aspirations, and marks an important advance in the development of our liberty. **It can be asserted in any proceeding, civil or criminal, administrative or judicial, investigatory or adjudicatory; and it [406 U.S. 441, 445] protects against any disclosures that the witness reasonably believes***

could be used in a criminal prosecution or could lead to other evidence that might be so used. *This Court has been zealous to safeguard the values that underlie the privilege.* “
[*Kastigar v. United States*, 406 U.S. 441 (1972)]

Why do you think the Fifth Amendment protects testimony even in a *civil* or tax trial? The reason is because a criminal trial could result from the testimony in a *civil* trial! This is what the supreme Court calls a “derivative use”. If the government puts you on the stand in a *civil* trial related to the imposition of penalties and the payment of a tax, and finds out that you committed criminal fraud based on your testimony, then they might later decide to indict you based on your testimony for a *criminal* offense and use your own testimony as evidence. Consequently, you can confidently assert the privilege in either a civil or a criminal trial and if the government wants to compel you, then all you have to do is demand immunity under [18 U.S.C. §6002](#). The ruling in *Kastigar* upholds the doctrine that such immunity, although granted by the federal government as the sovereign, also affords immunity from state prosecution as well.

“[A] state witness may not be compelled to give testimony which may be incriminating under federal law unless the compelled testimony and its fruits cannot be used in any manner by federal officials in connection with a criminal prosecution against him. We conclude, moreover, that in order to implement this constitutional rule and accommodate the interests of the State and Federal Governments in investigating and prosecuting crime, the Federal Government must be prohibited from making any such use of compelled testimony and its fruits.’ [43 378 U.S., at 79.](#)”
[*Kastigar v. United States*, 406 U.S. 441 (1972)]

Furthermore, if the state or federal governments attempt to introduce evidence in a criminal or civil proceeding where there was previous testimony under which immunity was granted, they have an affirmative duty as follows, citing again from *Kastigar*:

*A person accorded this immunity under [18 U.S.C. 6002](#), and subsequently prosecuted, is not dependent for the preservation of his rights upon the integrity and good faith of the prosecuting authorities. As stated in *Murphy*:*

"Once a defendant demonstrates that he has testified, under a state grant of immunity, to matters related to the federal prosecution, the federal authorities have the burden of showing that their evidence is not tainted by establishing that they had an independent, legitimate source for the disputed evidence." [378 U.S., at 79](#) n. 18.

This burden of proof, which we reaffirm as appropriate, is not limited to a negation of taint; rather, it imposes on the prosecution the affirmative duty to prove that the evidence it proposes to use is derived from a legitimate source wholly independent of the compelled testimony. [406 U.S. 441, 461]

Consequently, if a judge in a civil trial tries to compel you as a litigant and not a third party witness to testify after you have asserted your Fifth Amendment rights by saying that those rights only apply to *criminal* trials, then he is either ignorant, incompetent, or corrupt, or any combination of the foregoing.

Along the same lines, corrupt judges will also try to assert that being compelled to submit tax returns is *not* a violation of the Fifth Amendment. We know from the U.S. supreme Court ruling in *Garner v. U.S.*, [424 U.S. 648](#) (1975), however, that tax returns constitute the compelled testimony of a witness. Several cases have litigated this issue, including *William Conklin v. IRS*, No. 89N 1514 (unpublished),

U.S. v. Troescher, No. 95-55609 (unpublished), etc., and in all cases, the government has wiggled out of claiming that tax returns don't violate the Fifth Amendment because they are voluntary, which just reinforces our point throughout all of Chapter 5 that income taxes under Subtitle A of the Internal Revenue Code are and always have been voluntary and that calling them a "tax" is a misnomer, because they are really just a "donation"! This provides a good transition into our next section about nonpublication of court rulings, because both of these cases were unpublished for the obvious reason that the government doesn't want the average American to know that income taxes are voluntary so they made the rulings in the above cases unpublished so that it could not be cited as an authority in later cases.

7.12.12.8 Nonpublication of Court Rulings

Nonpublication is the act of by a judge of making a ruling without putting the pleadings or ruling of the case into the official, published government court record accessible to the general public. Nonpublication is very commonly used in our courts today, and especially in the federal courts on cases involving income tax issues. The reasons for this are clear: Federal judges work hand and hand with the IRS to mistreat and abuse Americans by denying their constitutional rights to life, liberty and property and then cover up that fact in order to escape culpability and prevent successful techniques or information used against the government from being learned about or reused by other freedom fighters. This section summarizes some of the issues related to nonpublication by our courts. You can obtain further information about this subject on our website at:

<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/LegalGovRef/LegalEthics/Nonpublication/Arguments/index.htm>

7.12.12.8.1 Background

- From time immemorial, the test of fair judgment has been the willingness of a court to apply the same rules consistently.
- Our legal system is based on the principle that each of us is allowed our day in court. Secret opinions destroy this principle because our day in court is no longer open.
- Selected publication policies of the courts imply that every court of appeal opinion is presumptively *unworthy* of publication, unless such opinion meets an arbitrary standard that it (1) establishes a new rule of law or alters or modifies an existing rule, 2) involves a legal issue of continuing public interest, or (3) criticizes existing law.

7.12.12.8.2 Publication Procedures Have Been Changed Unilaterally

- The transition to a policy that comes close to uniform non-publication has been so gradual that very few lawyers, let alone members of the general public, have any idea that this destruction of the appellate system of law has taken place.
- The movement toward limited publication is usually traced back to the 1971 Annual Report by the Federal Judicial Center.
- Only a third of federal courts' opinions are now published.
- In 1997, 93 percent of the opinions handed down by California appellate justices were unpublished.
- Changes in reporting procedures have been put in place throughout the United States unilaterally, only in the last three decades, without any public or legislative input.

7.12.12.8.3 Publication is Essential to a Legal System Based on Precedent

- The notion and that rulings that are inconsistent with precedent should not be published goes against a fundamental reality: decisions that are inconsistent with the weight of precedent are, by definition, law-making.
- The weight of precedent on a point of law hardens it, making it more difficult to overturn. The sheer number of affirmations allow attorneys to rely on the stability of a doctrine with greater confidence.
- Put a different way: a court may ignore one precedent but rarely a dozen.
- Later cases help flesh out a precedent, and help to make it more understandable.
- The sheer accumulation of a number of seemingly routine decisions on a particular point of law may suggest to the courts, legal practitioners, scholars, the legislature, or the public that problems exist in this area. This may set in motion reform.
- Publication furthers an important institutional goal: maintaining the appearance that justice has been done. Publication is a signal to litigants and observers that court has nothing tied, that the quality of its work in a case is open for public inspection.

7.12.12.8.4 Citizens In A Democracy are Entitled to Consistent Treatment from the Courts

- The federal courts are not works of art to be protected from the profane and the trivial. Nor are they debating or learned societies that exist to enhance the professional satisfaction of the judges. They are a public resource.
- Explanation is fundamental to our system of justice.
- The signed the opinion assigns responsibility. The author of a bad opinion cannot behind the shield of anonymity; blame or praise worthiness is there for all to see.
- Similarly situated parties are entitled to receive like treatment in the courts. Where there is no assurance that an opinion will be published, no litigant can be certain that his case will be decided by the Court of Appeal in accordance with principles of law followed in similar cases.
- If an appeals court unilaterally changes public law by a decision and then marks that opinions "not for publication," it effectively rules that its changes do not apply to all similar circumstances, but instead, apply only to the appellant.
- An unreported decision means that judgment may be completely different from one person to another even if the facts are exactly the same. By declaring itself unbound by precedent and uncommitted to the future use of precedent, the court makes law for one person only. This is, de facto, a judicial bill of attainder.

7.12.12.8.5 Operational Realities of Non-Publication

- Nearly all circuits use staff attorneys or staff law clerks to help screen cases for full or summary appellate procedure. The screening decision inevitably coincides to a great extent with the publication decision. Thus, the reliance upon staff attorneys combined with a predisposition toward non-publication seriously diminishes the responsibility that the judge bears for his decisions.
- Because law clerk influence is likely to be the greatest in less important cases, which are not argued and will not be published, diminished quality, once again, will be most prevalent there.
- In practice, publication decisions, once made, are usually cast in concrete, and a party seeking reconsideration is perceived as adverse and meets solid resistance in the court.
- Selective publication undermines fundamental legal functions by limiting the Supreme Court's ability to correct inconsistent appellate decisions where there is no petition for hearing.

- Litigants whose situation is complicated by an unpublished opinion can count on the Supreme Court for relief *only in theory*. High courts take a few cases, and even fewer that have not been published. *For most litigants, then, a court of appeal is the court of last resort.*
- Non-publication raises the genuine possibility that a subsequent panel, unaware of a prior result, might reach a contrary result, creating a conflict in the law.
- If there is only one circuit court opinion on issue, another court might feel justified in reaching a different result. However, in several panels or circuit has spoken on different variations of the issue, it will be the rare court which will take a different path. Thus, more published opinions make the law more stable. And conversely, more unpublished opinions destabilize the law.
- Non-publication also creates the possibility that a court may decline to publish an opinion to avoid calling attention to the fact that its opinion conflicts with a prior holding.
- Judges appear to be caught in a serious dilemma: if they pay no attention to their unpublished decisions, they risk inconsistency; if they consult those opinions, they appear to be using them as precedent.
- No citation rules significantly diminish the possibility of review based upon conflict among the circuits. The very notion of a conflict is theoretically attenuated; can be said, for instance, that conflict exists between two circuit courts that have come to opposite results on a single issue when each one insists that its determination is not precedential?
- An attorney seeking a writ of certiorari is unlikely to know of the unpublished law of other circuits and therefore, will be unable to draw the Supreme Court's attention to the existence of a conflict.
- Similarly, the fact that unpublished opinions are typically not as thorough or as elaborate as reported opinions makes it more difficult for the Supreme Court to determine exactly what the lower court has done and accept the case for review.

7.12.12.8.6 Impact Of Non-Publication Inside the Courts

- Those who choose what opinions to publish may consciously decide to suppress an opinion they know to be significant enough to publish either to escape review by a higher court, to escape criticism for a controversial decision, or even to allow a court to get away with making a decision contrary to prevailing law.
- Unpublished opinions inevitably contribute to conflicts of decision. Unpublished opinions may conflict with other unpublished opinions; worse, existing conflicts between unpublished opinions, and prior, published opinions are considerably more difficult to justify.
- The refusal to publish undercuts the ability of appellate divisions to cross check on each court's acumen. This further erodes quality-control.
- Many unpublished opinions have been found to be dreadful in quality, clearly falling below minimal standards of legal scholarship and consistency.
- The poor writing quality or unnecessary brevity of most unpublished opinions makes it difficult to identify examples of inconsistency or suppressed precedent. Lack of publication thus compounds inequitable treatment under the law.
- When errors are not brought to public attention via publication, courts may continue to decide low-profile cases wrongly for years.
- Inequality of publication rates within appellate divisions in larger states further compounds the essential inequality of the basic practice of nonpublication. In some California appellate divisions, fewer than 3% of cases are published. This raises fundamental questions about whether the court is fulfilling its constitutional duty.

- The criteria for publication cannot help but be applied unevenly. Cases that qualify for publication remained unpublished.
- Similarly, procedures for requesting publication work unequally and capriciously. Even if the court is inclined to permit publication (an uncommon occurrence) only the parties and institutional litigants have practical access to unpublished opinions, and they frequently do not have an interest in seeking publication.
- Depublication rules have been used by the California Supreme Court and by the appellate courts in order to silence criticism of their own rules by lower courts.

7.12.12.8.7 Openness

- There is no difference between non-publication of judicial decisions and any other instance of unjustified secrecy in government.
- The argument that public interest must be distinguished from public curiosity is without value: it reflects a disregard for the people's right and ability to decide for themselves what aspects of their government's activities are worthy of their attention.
- There is no such thing as unnecessary public curiosity with regard to the courts: unlike matters of national security or police intelligence, the courts have nothing to hide.
- What goes on in the courts is public business and therefore, unpublished appellate opinions -- whether cut-and-dried or not -- which contain any matters that arguably provide insight into the judicial process should be freely citable, and should -- the same as any other acts of government -- been subject to open public scrutiny and discussion.
- Wide publication would reduce, if not eliminate, the wasted time, money, and human effort that is expended daily in pursuing, administering, and terminating fruitless appeals, whose points of law already have been decided in prior unpublished opinions.
- If a court is not willing to stand by a decision as a valid precedent for all, then the decision should not be made or should be regarded as unenforceable.
- The lasting authority of a decision depends largely on the quality of its reasoning, which can be evaluated *only* by reading the opinion.

7.12.12.8.8 Constitutional Considerations

- Inefficiency of judicial operations is certainly not a desirable objective; it may, however, be a price worth paying it buys or helps to buy individual liberty.
- Inequities in publication consist of concerns over fundamental First Amendment rights of petition for redress of grievances and over equal access to the courts which involve both the procedural and the substantial due process provision.
- Inequities in publication also involve the equal protection provision of the Fourteenth Amendment.
- Inequities in publication present a challenge to the constitutional strictures that prescribe the duty of adjudication and demand a separation of powers between the legislative and judicial branches of government.
- The Supreme Court of United States has held repeatedly that the due process clauses of the fifth and fourteenth amendments to the United States Constitution prohibit a vague law because it is like a secret law to which no one has access.
- Many legal doctrines illustrate the importance of the law being knowable and accessible: for example, the void for vagueness doctrine, limitations on retroactive legislation, restrictions on retroactive overruling of judicial decisions, and requirements regarding prison law libraries.

- An unpublished appellate decision may create new law de facto, but is unexposed to the scrutiny of the public or the legislature. Moreover, the refusal to publish sends a message that the public in general and other potentially interested parties will never be affected by the law promulgated in this situation.
- An ever-growing body of decisional law is invaluable asset and the essence of a stable system that renders consistent judgments. New democracies throughout the world specifically bemoan a lack of such precedents. Totalitarian regimes, by definition, act unilaterally, are bound by no precedents, and are unaccountable.

7.12.12.8.9 Opinions Are Necessary, Even in “Insignificant Matters”

- It is false to condition non-publication on the assumption that most decisions only serve a dispute-settling function among two parties. Readers can compare and evaluate the majority opinion alongside any concurring or dissenting opinions to determine precisely what the court decided, and how far its decision may extend in future cases.
- Opinions facilitate the discovery of conflicts in the law.
- Opinions also permit readers to view the law's historical development and trace its impact on the society.
- Opinions that create inconsistencies must be considered law-making opinions; by definition, they depart noticeably from the established course of decisions. Such opinion should always be published.
- Unpublished opinions, especially ones that cannot be cited, will generally not receive critical commentary from the bench, the bar, scholars, and the public, for the obvious reason that they will go unnoticed. Moreover, there's little incentive to comment upon an opinion that is not "law."

7.12.12.8.10 Impact On The Legal System In Society

- Selective publication creates inequality of access to case law by making pertinent and unpublished opinions available largely to institutional and specialized lawyers
- Selective publication deprives trial judges, lawyers, litigants, and members of society of guidance.
- Selective publication decreases trial court compliance with the law, thus contributing to increased appellate litigation.
- The loss of precedent has driven many parties into alternative methods of dispute resolution. Simultaneously, it has made litigation to final judgment after appeal unavoidable because results have become random.
- Non-publication guarantees inequity in the legal establishment. It produces two classes of lawyers: the uninitiated ordinary practitioner who keeps up with the advance sheets and knows only what he reads there, and the specialist-insider who collects unpublished opinions in his field as well, and therefore possesses a special insight into the thinking of the intermediate appellate courts.
- Widespread uncertainty in the law erodes professional competence and the confidence of lawyers in the quality of their work. This, in turn, feeds misconduct, which is tolerated until it becomes the norm.
- Moreover, unequal access to unpublished decisions creates a "grapevine" among appellate judges and their research attorneys, and among attorneys who practice solely in one particular area of the law, whereby earlier unpublished opinions are relied on expressly or implicitly.
- Nonpublication subverts one of the most important forces in the development of the law: scholarly commentary. One of the most potent analytical tools in the hands of a legal commentator is an abundance of decisional law from which he can extract trends in the law, based on an assessment of how the rule of law is been judicially articulated, or how it may be operating in application.
- Most important of all, selective publication contributes to popular distrust of the courts.

7.12.12.8.11 Questions to Ponder

- How can we have the equal protection of the law if the courts have no institutional memory of the manner in which the laws are applied in similar cases?
- How can we be certain that our judges correctly and honestly state the law, if their decisions are not put out to the people for criticism?
- How can we ask our legislators to correct the law if we cannot know how the law is actually been applied by our courts?
- What effect does our right to equal protection of the law have if law can be applied to one person without immediately causing others who would otherwise be affected to complain on that person's behalf when the rule used is illegal, unconstitutional, or unjust?
- If experience shows that unpublished rulings truly add nothing to law, why do lawyers and judges continue to research unpublished opinions in preparing their briefs?

7.13 A Biblical Response to Those Who Say We Should Disarm

Genesis 4:8-12 In this passage, Scripture records the first murder wherein Cain killed Abel. That Cain must have used some sort of weapon to kill Abel is evidenced by the fact that Abel was bleeding (he was not strangled). Notice how God responded to the killing. He did not institute some sort of weapon-control, rather, He punished the one who committed the crime.

Exodus 20 and following In His holy Law, which God decreed at Sinai, nowhere do you see God outlawing weapons in regards to the various crimes which He prohibited in His legislation. He always punishes the perpetrator. He never disarms the citizenry.

Exodus 22:2 In this verse, God declares that if someone breaks into your house at night and you kill him, you are not guilty of murder. This verse makes clear that you have a God-given right to defend yourself and to defend your family.

Deuteronomy 22:23-27 This passage deals with rape. Notice that verse 27 ends with the words "but there was no one to save her." What is the implication of such a statement? The implication is that had someone been around to hear her cry out, they had a moral duty to intervene and protect her from being raped. To stand by would be immoral. We have a God-given right to defend not only ourselves, but also others.

Numbers 1 In His economy, God instituted an armed citizenry, not a standing army, in order to deal with the affairs of war regarding Israel. This is what the Founding Fathers of America envisioned for our nation. Even in Switzerland today, every home is furnished with a machine gun (one of the reasons Hitler chose not to invade Switzerland).

I Samuel 13:19-22 The Philistines disarmed the Israelites. Weapon-control was instituted. No blacksmiths were allowed lest the Israelites arm themselves. A disarmed people is the sign of a conquered people. A disarmed people is the sign of an enslaved people.

Isaiah 2:1-5 Many, including the United Nations, take the latter part of verse 4 in this passage, which states "*they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning hooks,*" and try to say that God wants us to disarm. The context makes clear however, that "swords will be beaten into

plowshares and spears into pruning hooks" *when God Himself rules*, not when the United Nations or any other government of man rules.

Matthew 5:38-39 In this passage, Jesus is not denigrating the Law of God in regards to one's right to defend himself and others, rather He is repudiating the *lex talionis* - the law of retaliation, which said, "if someone messes you up today, you go back and mess him up five times worse tomorrow." The Pharisees were even using the Law of God to justify this mindset. Jesus is repudiating this personal vengeance which some sought to justify and participate in. He is *not* saying we cannot defend ourselves or others.

Vengeance belongs to God (Romans 12:19; Deuteronomy 32:35; Proverbs 20:22). We are not to avenge ourselves. If we see someone who needs our help during the commission of a crime, we have a God-given right and duty to intervene. If however, the crime has been committed (past tense), we have no God-given right or duty to go and execute judgment upon the perpetrator. God will avenge. God will judge.

God has given the sword (a symbol of judgment) to the civil magistrate (Romans 13:4). If a crime has been committed, it is to be reported to the civil authorities and they have a God-given right and duty before God to execute judgment.

Matthew 26:51-52 Some try to say that this passage proves that Jesus was a pacifist and against guns. Quite the contrary. Where does Jesus tell Peter to put his sword? "*In its place.*" John makes it clearer, Jesus said to Peter "*Put your sword into the sheath*" (John 18:11). Jesus didn't tell him to melt it down into a plowshare, rather he told him to put it "into the sheath." The sword has its proper place. It's not evil. But Peter was wanting to use it in an improper situation. Jesus came to earth to die. Peter would be abrogating the purposes of God if he intervened with the sword. As Jesus goes on to say in verse 11 of John chapter 18, "*Shall I not drink the cup which My Father has given Me?*" Jesus was trying to teach His disciples that His Kingdom is not expanded in the earth through the use of force, rather it is expanded through the preaching of the Gospel and the discipling of the nations.

If someone wants to live by the sword, they will die by the sword, as Jesus says. In other words, he who uses the sword for improper purposes will die by it. It was improper for Peter to have used it in that situation. A criminal or a tyrant who uses the sword improperly will rightly die by it. But the use of the sword in a proper fashion, to defend one's person or one's family or one's country, is not condemned by Scripture, rather Scripture upholds it.

God is not a pacifist. Jesus is not a pacifist. As Jesus said in the very next verse, verse 53, "*Or do you not think that I cannot now pray to My Father, and He will provide Me with more than twelve legions of angels?*" Jesus could have used force. The use of force; the use of swords were simply improper for the situation in which Christ was involved. He was suppose to die. He and the Father are not pacifists. He did not use force because He had to drink the cup of the Father.

Exodus 15:3 This verse of Scripture declares the Lord to be a "*man of war.*" That God is not a pacifist is evidenced throughout Scripture. Even Jesus Himself, who is the brightness of God's glory and the express image of His person, and who has declared all that God is (Hebrews 1:3; John 1:18), drove the moneychangers out of the temple with a whip and overturned their tables (John 2:15). The book of Revelation defines Him as a King who does what? "*Judges and makes war*" (Revelation 19:11). The Scripture declares that Jesus Christ is "*the same yesterday, today, and forever*" (Hebrews 13:8). God's character does not change. God is not a pacifist.

In closing, there are some who say that "we should not have guns; we should just trust God." My response to those who say this is - "let me ask you, do you have a lock on your front door?" They always say "yes." I then ask "Do you lock it when you leave or go to bed at night?" Those who live in the city always say "yes." I then ask "Why do you have a lock on your door? Why don't you just *trust* God?"

Just because we have a lock on our door or a gun in our closet does not mean we are trusting in them to protect us with the same *trust* with which we're to trust the Lord.

Rather, we simply see the wisdom and prudence of having such things in order to be good stewards in protecting our belongings and our families.

The psalmist understood that there was no contradiction. The psalmist (David) who said in verse one of Psalm 144 "*Blessed be the Lord my Rock, Who trains my hands for war, and my fingers for battle*" said in verse two of Psalm 144 "*My lovingkindness and my fortress, My high tower and my deliverer, My shield and the one in whom I take refuge.*"

7.14 Living in a Pagan/Godless Culture

America is a pagan society. I think all of us have come to the place reluctantly where we can see that that is in fact the case. We have experienced as a nation over 150 years of strong Christian biblical influence. But that is rapidly declining. People still attend religious services. They still say they believe in God when they are polled. But there exists a kind of practical atheism and at best a situational morality. For the most part, whatever vestiges of Christian religion still pervade our culture are weak and compromising if not cultic and apostate.

Some have said in years past that we are living in a post-Christian America. Perhaps it could be better said, we are living in a sub-Christian America. We want to say we're Christians, we just don't want to commit to what Christianity is. Our Christianity has become hollow. We are clearly pagan but we wear the mask of religion. Our nation is now affirming through its leaders, through its congresses, its legislative bodies, its courts and its judges a distinctively anti-Christian agenda. Anything and everything that is distinctively Christian is being swept away under the aegis of equal rights, moral freedom. And as believers, frankly we tend to resent this.

It is not necessarily important that the church somehow impact its culture to make it superficially Christian. That is not the goal of this section. That is not our agenda. That is not our purpose. It's been a nice thing for those of us who live in America to have had Christianity influence our life as a nation...and we were a nation founded by people who wanted Christian freedom and they wrote things in the early documents of our nation to preserve Christianity, at least as much as they could, so that our culture has been influenced by the Bible, by Christian values and Christian standards. And those things have become an important component in our society.

Now we all know that's changing and it's changing very rapidly and it's changing right before our eyes. We are nearly fully secular and whatever remains to be done to make us wholly secular, we are rapidly doing it. America is abandoning its Christian influences as fast as it possibly can. And we are all being faced with some very disturbing changes. Those of us who are Christians don't like this. We have sort of assumed that a nation should be as Christian as it possibly could be, although that assumption is not certainly a biblical one. We like it that way and now it's changing and it tends to make us sad and even

angry. We watch biblical standards being replaced systematically by anarchy, by total moral freedom without any seeming moral limits and this pervasive mentality of equal rights that makes everybody into an egotist demanding his own rights, whatever they are deemed to be.

And as Christians watch this demise, they often react with anger and fear. For example, in February of 1990, Pat Robertson held a meeting after the National Prayer Breakfast in Washington, D.C., and that meeting was designed to call for the formation, he said, of a Christian anti-defamation league. He said, and I quote him, "You've called us fools so we'll call you bigots. Christians are tired of being stepped on and the time has come to stand up for Christians' rights," end quote.

Now was he declaring war on a non-Christian culture? A Christian anti-defamation league? I wonder if you could get Stephen to join? Or Paul? You call us fools, we'll call you bigots...that sounds like retaliation, that sounds like vengeance, that sounds like we're declaring war in a non-Christian society. Is that what we are to do? Are they the enemy? Are they to be hated? Are they to be fought against? On the other hand, aren't they the people we're supposed to love and reach?

Frequently on Christian television programs you will hear various hosts and not the least of which is Paul Crouch on our own local TBN hurling abuse at non-Christians in the media who question the integrity of Christian broadcasting. These abusive statements against the Christian media sometime involve cursing them or consigning them to the judgment of God or even wishing that God would take their life. Is the non-Christian media our enemy? Are we supposed to be attacking the system of government? Are we supposed to be attacking the human institutions and forcing them politically or by intimidation into some biblical morality?

In the summer of 1991 there was something called "The Joshua Project." And they promoted it very widely with full-page ads in Christian publications. And The Joshua Project aimed, quote, "At taking back the culture." Now that again sounds like a declaration of war. That sounds like some kind of conflict, some kind of revolt. Somebody's got it and we've got to go get it, a sort of a crusade mentality, if you want to go back in history and look at the Crusades. The conference project that I mentioned described its purpose, I quote, "To sound the alarm, to instill the vision, to establish the leadership that will enable us to reclaim the heart of our culture," end quote.

Now that all sounds very noble. But is it? Is that our agenda? Are we to make sure that through legislation and intimidation and through the judicial process by going to court and suing and whatever else are we to do through politicizing and campaigning this particular agenda of taking back the culture? Is this what we're all about? Are we to create a superficial Christian culture?

David Rambo responding to that, he's the president of the Christian and Missionary Alliance says, and I quote, "God expects us to be salt in the world but let's do it in the context of God's redeeming love for all men and women. We must focus on the gospel, proclaiming it winsomely to secular people rather than alienating them on matters that are not central to our message," end quote.

John Seale, an author writes, "A politicized faith not only blurs our priorities but weakens our loyalties." That is a very insightful statement. It both blurs our priorities and weakens our loyalty. Our priority is to preach the gospel, our loyalty is to Jesus Christ and His Kingdom alone. He went on to say, "Our primary citizenship is not on earth but in heaven. Though few evangelicals would deny this truth in theory, the language of our spiritual citizenship frequently gets wrapped in the red, white and blue. Rather than acting as resident aliens of a heavenly kingdom, too often we sound like and act like resident apologists for a Christian America. Unless we reject the false reliance on the illusion of

Christian America, evangelicalism will continue to distort the gospel and thwart a genuine biblical identity," end quote.

If we consume our time and our money and our energy and our thoughts and our plans and our efforts in trying to make a Christian America, we will distort the gospel and thwart a genuinely biblical identity. He is exactly right. In fact, he went on to say, "American evangelicalism is now covered by layers and layers of historically shaped attitudes that obscure our original biblical core," end quote.

If you say to the average person "What is a Christian?", how many of those layers are they going to have to search through to find the reality? We must reject our confused loyalties. We must reject our compound concerns with regard to the passing world. We must reject all efforts to externally change culture and we must get on about doing what we're supposed to be doing. Billy Graham said, "So long as the gospel remains the gospel and the church the church, so long as the church of God is in need of reformation, the world of mission and one last person of salvation there will always be a future for those who seek to define themselves by the gospel itself," end quote. He is right. We cannot afford to weaken our spiritual mission, we cannot afford to obscure our priority of gospel proclamation, we cannot afford to become confused about which kingdom we belong to by getting involved in efforts to change cultural norms, cultural morals, cultural values, cultural behavior.

And certainly we can't get so engulfed in that that we become the enemies of the very people we seek to win to Christ. We can and we must reject sin as sin but we do not engage in defamation and destruction and efforts to superficially change a culture. The task of evangelizing the lost calls for focus on that very thing. If someone says to me, "What do you do?" as people often do if I'm sitting on airplane or somewhere else, "What do you do?" The common question that men get asked. I could say, "Well, I'm a minister in a church," and who knows what that would mean? Who knows what they would think? It's better if I say, "I preach the gospel." That's much more central to what I do...I preach the Word of God...that's what I do. And that is, by the way, a very fast way into a conversation on the right subject.

Certainly Paul was consumed with this very singular mandate of evangelism when he wrote this letter to Titus. And he is very concerned that the people living in the pagan culture of Crete which was utterly pagan, without any Christian influence at all, not get engaged in trying to moralize cultural behavior, that they not get involved in trying through the political avenues to create some kind of Christian culture. What he was concerned about was that they be able to demonstrate to their society that God saves people from sin. And that the primary way to do that was to demonstrate a saved life. If I'm going to tell you that Dr. So-and-so cures people from cancer, you're going to say to me, "Oh, who did he cure, let me see him." And if I'm going to say to you, "Dr. So-and-so over here makes blind people see," you're going to say, "Oh, who did he give sight to?" And if I'm going to say to you, "God is a saving God who delivers men from their sin and all that goes with it of hopelessness and helplessness and emptiness," you're going to say to me, "Show me what a saved person looks like then I'll know whether your God can do that." That is the mandate of the church. We do not attempt to change culture externally, we preach the gospel and it changes men internally. We don't even belong to this culture, we are simply aliens, our land is heaven.

The Christianity that once was part of the fabric of our nation that created some cultural props to hold us up and to give us a biblical morality and some divine standard in which to judge behavior is now gone. Cultural Christianity, whatever it was, is dead. Biblical morality is assaulted constantly. Moral freedom reigns as God. Materialism, family breakup and breakdown is epidemic. Abortions go on.

Sexual evils, drugs, crime, pagan education is flooding our nation like the Mississippi River. And we can't come close to coping or dealing with this flood of evil. We have torn down all of the standards and now we can't figure out what is right so we don't know what to teach anybody so we can't control behavior in the early years of childhood.

We now have a generation of people who have taken the agenda and are running with it. We don't have enough standards to control them. We don't have enough police to arrest them. We don't have enough courts to process them. And we don't have enough jails to keep them in.

For those of us who watched the great revival of the seventies, and I believe it was, when we saw the tremendous movement that started out as the "Jesus Movement," a sweeping movement of campuses and young people, we saw those great movements of students toward Christ, we saw mass baptisms in the oceans. We thought it was all going to lead us to days of glory and blessing. We saw Bibles being translated so that we could have them in a fresher English translation. We saw the proliferation of books and publishers and tapes and new music and there was a definite wind of the Spirit of God blowing in our country. And those were wonderful days.

But the revival of the seventies and the early eighties has turned into the debauchery of the nineties. And the change is sad. And we feel the sadness. And after a while we begin to feel resentment. We don't like what the President is doing. We don't like his agenda. We don't like his decisions. We don't like what our governor and even our mayor is saying about homosexuality. We don't...we don't like the kinds of things that our senators and our congressmen are doing. We're not happy with the decisions they are making. We are repulsed by the verdicts that are being rendered in courts that are exonerating people of criminal intent and act and letting off people who have no intended ill. I should say...who are judging people who had no intended ill and letting off people who are guilty of things we think are heinous. We aren't happy with the agenda all the way down, whether it's the judicial branch or the legislative or the executive branch. We are tired of the evolution of freedom to the point where anybody can do absolutely anything. We are angry that perversion is legalized in our country and the will of God is blatantly rejected. It's one thing to have sin, it's something else to redefine it as acceptable human behavior.

And I really believe that these are times that can...that can breed not only a sadness in the life of Christians but even hostility. And I sense that in conversations and meetings I have in various places with people that, first of all, we were sad at the trends and now we're a bit angry about it. And then we get even angrier when they decide to raise our taxes so we can fund more of this agenda. And we fear for ourselves and mostly we fear for our children and we fear for our grandchildren, don't we? And the worst we know is yet to come and it's going to come on our children's children.

And the question that I want to pose to you in this section is this...how are we to respond now that our society is so pagan? How are we to react? What is a proper Christian response in a pagan culture?

Paul answers that very question in Titus 3:1 to 8, that is precisely the issue here. Titus, as you know, is on the island of Crete. He is there to set in order the things that remain in the churches. There were at least a hundred cities on this island. We don't know how many of them had churches, but many. He has a very great responsibility to set the church in order to ordain godly leaders against a very corrupt culture. Cretans, you'll remember, according to chapter 1 verse 12, were basically designated by a prophet of their own as liars, evil beasts and lazy gluttons. Unquestionably they were engulfed in idolatry and all of the extant paganism that made up the Greek and Roman world of the time. Titus

then had these churches as little pockets of righteousness in a sewer of paganism and needed to instruct them about how to react to the culture around them. Very important.

Before we proceed, it is important to emphasize that the goal of this section is not to confront our culture. Confronting the problems with our culture and trying to fix them sounds like a noble goal and I'm sure there are people who can see certain noble aspects of it and there may be some. But our goal in this section is not to impact our culture by changing their moral values. Our goal is not to impact our culture by creating traditional values, family values through legislation or judicial process. Our goal is not to make sure that the United States of America adheres to a national policy that equates to biblical morality. That is not our goal. We are not involved in altering social morality. We are not involved in upgrading cultural conduct. We are interested in people becoming saved. That is the only agenda in this section. If we're going to change our culture we're going to change it from the inside out.

You see, the church has one mission, we are a nation of priests. And a priest had one simple function, to bring people to God, to usher them into His presence. It is the only thing we are in the world to do. Frankly, if people die in a communist government or a democracy, it really doesn't matter if they end up in hell. If they die under a tyrant or a benevolent dictator, it doesn't matter if they end up in hell. If they die believing that homosexuality is wrong or believing that homosexuality is right and end up in hell, it doesn't matter. If they die as a policeman or a prostitute without Christ, they're going to end up in the same place. Whether they die moral or immoral will make no difference in their eternity. Whether they stood on the side of the street with the pro-abortion rights group and screamed for legalizing and maintaining legal abortions, or on the other side of the street against abortion and screamed to stop the killing, if they didn't know Christ they're going to end up in the same place. Right? That isn't the issue, the issue is salvation...the issue is salvation. And the sad reality is that when the church gets a moralizing, politicizing bent it usually has a negative impact on its evangelization mission because then it makes the people hostile to the current system and they become the enemies of the society rather than the compassionate friend.

If we are going to see our nation transformed, it has to be done from the inside out, that's our agenda. And so we're here to preach Christ and to know nothing among you except Christ and Him crucified.

But behind that preaching must come some manner of living, some kind of life that makes our message believable. It is to that which Paul addresses himself in Titus chapter 3, let's read it. "Remind them to be subject to rulers, to authorities, to be obedient, to be ready for every good deed, to malign no one, to be uncontentious, gentle, showing every consideration for all men for we also once were foolish ourselves, disobedient, deceived, enslaved to various lusts and pleasures, spending our life in malice and envy, hateful, hating one another. But when the kindness of God our Savior and His love for mankind appeared, He saved us, not on the basis of deeds which we have done in righteousness but according to His mercy, by the washing of regeneration and renewing by the Holy Spirit whom He poured out upon us richly through Jesus Christ our Savior that being justified by His grace we might be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life. This is a trustworthy statement. And concerning these things I want you to speak confidently so that those who have believed God may be careful to engage in good deeds. These things are good and profitable for men."

I want to start with that last line..."these things are good and profitable for men." What are you talking about, Paul? What are you saying? What I'm saying is if you live this way it's going to benefit everybody around you. It's very important how you conduct yourself. In what sense is it good and profitable for men? Go back to chapter 2. In chapter 2 he was also talking about Christian conduct and

he says in verse 5 that we are to so live that the Word of God may not be dishonored, verse 8, that our opponent may be put to shame having nothing bad to say about us. And the end of verse 10, that we may adorn the doctrine of God our Savior in every respect.

What's the point? We want to so live as to exalt the Word of God, shut the mouths of the critic and put on display God's saving power. We want the world to know that God is a saving God, that God transforms people. And how can we convince them of that? By showing them our transformed lives. Right? We are to be displaying God's saving power.

Now remember that Titus chapter 3 follows this wonderful discussion in Titus chapter 2 verses 1 to 14. And in that section of verses 1 to 14 of Titus chapter 2, Paul was also telling Titus that he needed to instruct the church about their behavior. But in that chapter it was the behavior among Christians. And how we conduct ourselves together as Christians is going to give a testimony to the world of God's saving transforming power when we live holy, gracious, loving, wise, kind lives, all of the things that he said in chapter 2. It is very evident that we are not like everybody else to the watching world, that is going to make the Word of God honored, that is going to silence the critics and that is going to adorn the doctrine of God as a saving God, one who can totally transform people. So the way we live within the church and among ourselves is crucial as a platform for our proclamation.

Then in Titus chapter 3 he's concerned not with how we live among each other in the church, but how we live in the society. How we live among non-Christians, how we live in our culture. If we're going to make God's saving power manifest, we have to make it manifest in our relations with Christians and with non-Christians. And never is the time more crucial for careful Christian behavior than when believers are engulfed in pagan culture. I mean, that's how it was, you understand don't you, in Paul's day? There was no cultural Christianity. There was no Christianity until he introduced it. In the Gentile world it was just blatant comprehensive paganism with all of the trappings that Satan could develop into it. It was totally and exclusively with the exception of a few Jews a Satanic system. All the existing religion, all the existing ideology, philosophy and thought, all the existing law and order, all the existing values, mores were derived from a non-Christian system. It was thoroughly pagan until Paul arrived. And the clash was so great that it cost him and many others their lives.

Paul knew what it was like to live in a thoroughly pagan culture, far more pagan than what we experience because in our country there is a great force of truly regenerated people. And he knew what it was to be in a world of abusive deadly inequality and slavery. He knew what it was to be in a culture of tyrants, petty dictators who were murderous. He knew what it was to be under abusive leadership. He knew what it was to see a society engulfed up to its ears in sexual perversion, the breakdown of the family. We read in some ancient documents about people who had 26 and 27 wives and or husbands, depending on the situation. The world was literally flooded with idols, petty gods. People were heavily taxed and the tax collectors were extortionists who took what wasn't justly due them. If anybody complained they would take their life as soon as look at them. And the world was full of terrorists, people who were going around executing those who had done something against them. Even in the Jewish world there were the Zealots, the Sacarei(??), the guys who carried the daggers and came up behind the authorities in Israel and stabbed them to death, terrorism was everywhere.

It was an ugly world. And Paul never ever says in any of his letters, "Now, ladies and gentlemen, we need to moralize our pagan culture. We need to impact our culture some how." No, all he ever said was, "We need to evangelize it." And he wasn't calling for any kind of protest. He wasn't calling for any kind of contention or any kind of war against the existing mentality, he was calling for the

preaching of the gospel that transforms the life. But it wasn't just the preaching, it was the living within the church and outside the church that gave a platform that made the message believable. You see, what God had done for the Christians in Crete He wanted to do for a lot of other folks, too. And the conduct of the believers there was crucial to that saving work, that saving enterprise. So he tells Titus to instruct the people with authority. Remember that in chapter 2 verse 15? With authority regarding their duty in a pagan world.

Now first, let's look at verse 1. He says just two words, "Remind them." And I want to point out to you that he's simply saying this isn't anything new. Obviously he had covered this in the past, certainly the folks knew the responsibilities they had for living in a pagan culture but they needed to be reminded. And that is a duty that belongs to everyone who stands behind the sacred desk, as it were, and proclaims the truth to God's flock. We are basically here to remind you of what you know. Present imperative means it's a regular ongoing continuing duty of reminding them. And he wants to remind them of the necessity for behaving themselves in a pagan society.

Now what he does in these eight verses is sum it up by asking them to remember four realities. It is wonderfully organized around these realities. First, remember your duty. Second, remember your former condition. Thirdly, remember your salvation. And fourthly, remember your mission. And if you will remind the people of those four things, it will keep their behavior, as Peter put it, excellent among the pagans. Remember your duty and he outlines them in verses 1 to 2. Remember your former condition and he outlines that in verses 3 to 4, actually verse 3. Then he says remember your salvation, verses 4 through 7. And finally in verse 8 he reminds them, remember your mission. And if you keep those things in mind, they become the motivation for living excellently in a pagan world.

I wish I could give them all to you in this document. But let's take point one...remember your duty. What is our duty? We may be hurt. We may be disappointed. We may be angry as we watch the vestiges of Christian influence die. We may be angry at what we see happening in the courts and in the congresses and the executive offices of our land. What is our response? We may not agree with the decisions that they are making. Here's what he says. "Remind them to be subject to rulers, to authorities, to be obedient, to be ready for every good deed, to malign no one, to be uncontentious, gentle, showing every consideration for all men." Seven virtues are listed there. Seven virtues. Now listen to this. It doesn't matter whether your ruler is Caesar, Herod, Pilate, Felix, Fetus, Agrippa, Stalin, Hitler, Winston Churchill, Bill Clinton, it doesn't matter who it is, he says be subject, you teach them to be subject.

Rulers were tyrants. They lacked integrity. They were murderous. They were not noble. Governments made laws and maybe all the laws weren't equitable, just and fair. But he says you be subject to rulers, to authorities. He is reiterating a very commonly given biblical principle, Matthew 22, the Pharisees were always trying to trap Jesus. They want to trap Him publicly because they wanted to discredit Him publicly and turn some element of the population against Him. So they sent disciples to Him along with the Herodians and they said in verse 16, "Teacher, we know that You're truthful and You teach the way of God in truth and defer to no one for You're not partial to any." And that was a whole lot of sinful flattery. "Tell us therefore, what do You think? Is it lawful to give a poll tax to Caesar or not?" Now what they're trying to do is to get Him to say it is or it isn't. If He says it is lawful, all the Jews are going to hate Him because they hate Caesar, they hate the poll tax, they hate the whole idea of being in occupied country ruled by a bunch of pagans. If on the other hand He agrees with the Jews and says no it is not right, it is not lawful before God to pay tax to Caesar, don't pay your tax, then they're going to

tell the Romans. One way or the other they're going to get some element of the power of the populous against Him.

But Jesus perceived their evil intent and He said, "Why are you testing Me, you hypocrites? Show me the coin used for the poll tax. They brought Him a denarius. He said to them, Whose likeness and inscription is this? They said to Him, Caesar's." And you know what? They hated to use those coins because anything with an image on it constituted...what?...an idol. And they hated that. And, of course, Caesar was a god. And this was idolatry to them. They hated not only the idea of taxation but they hated the idea of the inherent idolatry in it, a graven image made after a god. It was a violation of the first commandment. But Jesus was so wise, He said to them, "Then render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's and to God the things that are God's." And He upheld both. He said on the one hand pay your tax, on the other hand this had nothing to do with God, you must give to God what is God's.

The point for us today is Jesus paid His tax, even with the inherent idolatry. He said pay your tax. What were they doing with that tax? Things that surely Jesus was not pleased with. But the general overall thrust of government was positive and Christians are to submit to it.

Go to Romans 13 and here you have the most comprehensive statement about this from the Apostle Paul, the first few verses of chapter 13. Verse 1, "Let every person be in subjection to the governing authorities." That's just plain and simple blanket statement. Everybody is in subjection. It doesn't matter whether it's a democracy or communist form of government, it doesn't matter whether it's a monarchy or whether it's a dictatorship, you're in subjection: good, bad, whatever form, you're in subjection to the governing authorities. Then he gives you seven reasons why.

1. Reason one: government is designed by God. "There is no authority except from God and those which exist are established by God." God has designed human government. He has designed it to exist in a number of forms and it is there because of His design for the control of human life. So submit. God designed it.

2. Reason two: Resisting is resisting God, verse 2, "He who resists authority has opposed the ordinance of God."

3. Reason three: Resisters will be punished. End of verse 2, "Those who oppose will receive condemnation upon themselves." So you submit to the government...why? It's designed by God, resisting is resisting God and resisters will be punished.

4. Reason four: Government is designed to restrain evil. Verse 3, "Rulers are not a cause for fear for good behavior but for evil. Do you want to have no fear of authority? Do what is good and you'll have praise from the same." In other words, government is designed to restrain evil.

5. Reason five: It's designed to promote good. Verse 4, "It is a minister of God to you for good. If you do what is evil, be afraid."

6. Reason six: Government is empowered to punish. It is a minister of God, an avenger who brings wrath on the one who practices evil. And that's why it doesn't bear the sword for nothing. God has given it the right of capital punishment. That's what bearing the sword means, God has even given government the right to take a life.

7. Reason seven (In Titus 3 verse 5): Submit to the government for conscience's sake, not just because you fear the wrath that's going to come if you disobey but for the sake of conscience because it's right.

So, submit to the government. Why? It is designed by God, resisting is resisting God. Resisters will be punished. Government is designed to restrain evil and promote good. Rulers are empowered to punish and do it for conscience's sake. Then the sum of it, verses 6 and 7, "So pay your taxes," verse 6 says, "for rulers are servants of God, devoting themselves to this very thing." And then verse 7, "Render to all what is due, tax to whom tax is due, custom to whom custom, fear to whom fear, honor to whom honor." The whole point is God has put government in place and you are to submit to it.

Now he gives all those reasons. The one reason he doesn't give is the evangelistic reason so that we can live and demonstrate that this world is not an issue to us. What's the difference how much tax we pay? That's not our concern. It is not our concern to be worried about legislation. It is not our concern to be worried about what the President does. It is our concern to live holy lives and call people to Christ. And our citizenship is in another world. We are only strangers and aliens here. We'll do whatever we're asked so that we do not mar our testimony because that is the greater and compelling issue.

First Peter 2 adds the very important note of evangelism. In 1 Peter 2 verse 9 says, "We are a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation and we are to proclaim the excellencies of Him who called us out of darkness into His marvelous light." In other words, we are to demonstrate what salvation look like. We're to show people what a saved person is. How do we do it? Verse 12, "Keep your behavior excellent among the pagans." What do you mean by that? Verse 13, "Submit yourselves for the Lord's sake to every human institution whether to a king as one in authority or governors as sent by him for the punishment of evil doers and the praise of those who do right. This is the will of God that by doing right you may silence the ignorance of foolish men. Honor all men...verse 17...love the brotherhood, fear God, honor the king." How you live in a pagan culture is crucial to proclaiming the excellencies of the one who saved you, to demonstrating your transformed life, that's the issue.

Now that takes us back to Titus again. The Apostle Paul is saying you need to be subject to rulers and authorities for evangelistic reasons. Back down to the bottom of verse 8, "This is good and profitable for the watching world."

Then he says you need to be obedient, verse 1, to be obedient, the second one. You are to obey whatever it is they say. You say, "Are we ever to disobey?" Yes. There's one occasion when we disobey, that is when they ask us what the Bible forbids us to do or when they ask us not to do what the Bible commands us to do. And the best illustration of that, as you know, is in Acts chapter 4. They told the Apostles not to preach. You remember they summoned them in Acts 4:18, commanded them not to speak or teach. Peter and John said to them, "Whether it is right in the sight of God to give heed to you rather than to God, you be the judge." You judge whether we obey you or God. "For we cannot stop speaking," they said. Chapter 5, they flogged them, whipped them, verse 40, ordered them to speak no more. They went on their way from the presence of the council rejoicing they had been considered worthy to suffer and verse 42, every day in the temple from house to house they kept right on teaching, preaching Jesus as Christ.

There comes a point in time when the state turns against the church and tells the church not to do what God has mandated to do, then we have to obey God and suffer the consequence...be it prison or death. The only time we disobey is when we have been mandated by Scripture to do something we are forbidden to do or not to do something we are being compelled to do. We are obedient.

Then he says, at the end of verse 1, "Remind them to be ready for every good deed." This is so good. Remind them to be ready for every good deed. This is aggressive goodness. This isn't reluctant saying, "Well I'm not going to make an issue, I'm going to dutifully grit my teeth and pay my tax, I'm going to keep my anger under control." No, this is...this is an internal eagerness...the word ready means eager...eagerness to do every conceivable good deed. Approach life no matter how volatile the culture is against Christianity, no matter how pagan it is to the very core, how engulfed in idolatry and sin it is, we aggressively pursue every good thing as Galatians 6:10 says, "We are doing good to all men, especially those of the household of faith."

By the way, this is in direct contrast with the behavior of false teachers. Look back at chapter 1 verse 16. Remember the description of false teachers, they are detestable, disobedient and worthless for any good deed. One of the things, beloved, that sets believers apart from false teachers and their followers is the eager goodness in the lives of believers that demonstrates transformation, that demonstrates new birth, salvation, the life of God, the power of the Spirit, righteousness, virtue. We're to be known in society for our goodness, for our aggressive goodness.

Then in verse 2 he moves on in his list of seven virtues, "To malign no one." Not even one person is the idea. It's the verb blasphemeo from which we get the word blaspheme, it means to slander or to treat with contempt. We must confront sin. We can confront sin. We can confront the sinner because of his sin, we must call sinners to repentance but we do not stoop to blasphemy, slander, cursing and speaking contemptuously of people. I don't appreciate that when Christian people do that with regard to leaders. That's not the Christian approach. We may not like what they do but we must remember, folks, the condition they are in. Do we forget that they are blinded in their minds by the god of this world? How else do you expect unconverted people to act then like unconverted people? And how do unconverted people act? They act under the influence of Satan and his current system and they're just carrying out the only agenda they can comprehend. Maligning them is unacceptable.

Look at 1 Timothy for a moment, chapter 2. First Timothy chapter 2 verse 1, here was Timothy in Ephesus, another corrupt idolatrous city. He says to Timothy, "I want to urge you that entreaties and prayers and petitions and thanksgivings be made on behalf of all men, for kings and all who are in authority in order that we may lead a tranquil and quiet life in all godliness and dignity." Listen to that. We're to be tranquil, that's peaceful, quiet, godly, dignified. And what is our attitude toward the President and the Congress and the judges, the kings and everybody in authority? We pray for them. This is what God wants us to do, to pray for them constantly, making petition, prayers, entreaties for those in authority that God will work in their lives, that God will save them because God, it says in verses 3 and 4, is a saving God who has sent, verses 5 and 6, Jesus Christ to provide salvation. God wants to save and we want to pray for their salvation. Don't malign them, pray for their salvation.

Then he says to Titus another interesting thing that Christians are to be uncontentious, amachos, not fighting. We're not to fight, we're to be peaceful, friendly, don't quarrel with government, don't fight leaders. We're not to be combative. That's not the agenda for us. We're not even of this world. This isn't even our country, in a sense. We're just kind of sliding through. It's so easy to be contentious and hostile and angry about what happens in the pagan culture in which we live, and especially if it elevates our taxes or if it changes our neighborhood or our culture or whatever it is and we get angry about that. We don't like to see God denied His proper place and Satan exalted to be the leader of everything. But we are not to be contentious, we are not to fight. This is a passing world for us. All we can do is reach out as we move through and by the grace of God touch some life with the saving gospel both by what we say and what we are.

Then he says we're to be gentle. It's a beautiful word, *epieikes*, it means to be reasonable and forbearing. I think the simplest synonym is kind, considerate of human weakness, very patient with sinners. One writer says, "Sweet reasonableness." Not cantankerous, not argumentative, not angry, not hostile, sweetly reasonable, graciously kind, gentle.

And then he closes in verse 2 with the last of the seven, "Showing every consideration...showing every consider..." that's the word meekness in the Beatitudes, Matthew 5:5, *prautes*, meekness. We're meek, that's power under control, you'll remember. Never asserting one's rights, is what it means. Never fighting for one's rights. Christians don't do that. We're not in a fight for our rights. We don't have any political agenda. We don't have any legislative agenda. We're not after any rights. We don't want any particular rights with this society, we'll just live for Christ come what may. It refers to patient trust in God. We commit our lives to Him. Second Timothy 2 says if we live like this, meekly, gently, God may use us to lead people to repentance and the knowledge of the truth, 2 Timothy 2:25. You see, everything we do has an evangelistic goal. And as we live in this world, subjected to the authorities and the rulers, obedient to all the things that they lay out that don't directly violate Scripture, as we are eagerly pursuing every imaginable good deed within our society as we malign no one, fight with no one, but rather are patient with sinners, gentle, kind, we're going to demonstrate salvation because only transformed people can act like that.

And then he closes in verse 2 by saying, "For all men...for all men." You need to do this before everybody. That little phrase is very important. It appears a number of times in 1 Timothy and I want to point them out to you and we'll close. First Timothy chapter 2 verse 1, why does he say for all men? Why does he throw that in there? Because "all men" has become an important term in Paul's mind. First Timothy 2:1, "Prayers...he says at the end of verse 1...should be made on behalf of all men." Why? Verse 4, "Because God desires all men to be...what?...saved." Verse 6, "Christ Jesus who gave Himself as a ransom for all." God desires all men to be saved, and then he says to believers, live your lives this way for all men to see. That's consonant with God's saving purpose. First Timothy 4:10 says, "God is the Savior of all men." All men need to see our testimony. They need to see the transformation. Titus 2:11, "The grace of God has appeared bringing salvation to all men." See, he repeats that phrase again and again and again.

God loves all men. God desires that all men be saved, he says. God wants you to pray for all men. The grace of God has appeared to all men. You live your life before all men so that they can see the transformation.

Only Christians can live like that. That's our duty. That's how we have to live.

Before we proceed further, we will consider the general tone in which we approach discussion of the subject in this section in Titus 3. New Testament churches were small islands in a sea of paganism. You see, they existed in an absolutely pagan culture. The Gentile world knew nothing about the Bible. It knew nothing about biblical morality. It knew nothing about Christian values. It knew nothing about a godly sense of mercy or justice. It knew nothing about a proper understanding of freedom within the framework of moral code. It was purely and totally and comprehensively and utterly pagan. These churches were born then in a culture with no Christian influence. There was no cultural Christianity. There was no Christian influence on social behavior or on the belief systems. The Gentile world was literally engulfed in idolatry, all of it designed by Satan. Their cultures were totally controlled by a Satanic agenda worked out through utterly and totally depraved human beings involved in worshipping demons.

So the churches then were in direct opposition and contrast to everything within the framework of cultural life. Given that obvious understanding, we might assume if we listen to Christians today in America that the early church should have made its primary agenda to impact culture, to try to get the various nations into which the church had been born adopt some kind of politically Christian agenda. Somehow the early church, some would seemingly want to tell us, should have put together some kind of biblical morality, some kind of biblical value system and worked very hard to get the nations to adopt that biblical moral code. However, the early church never did that. It had nothing to do with that. It did not concern itself with whatever the moral code of the nation was. It was not concerned about social behavior. It was not trying to influence culture politically or judicially or legislatively. The early church existed to do one thing and that was to reach lost people with the gospel. That was the beginning and the end of their purpose and that is still the church's purpose, that is still our only purpose, that is why we are in the world.

Frankly, it has been something of a nice thing to live in a country like America which has had such strong Christian influence. I mean, we are somewhat privileged to be living in the western world and in all of the western world to be living in that part of the western world, the English-speaking part of the western world, and particularly the United States where Christianity has had such an influence in the past 150 plus years on our culture. But that isn't how it is in most cases. Certainly through the history of the church that was not the case and it is not even the case now in all parts of the world, for several hundred years churches have existed in places like India that are utterly and totally and comprehensively pagan and other parts of Asia, many of the nations of Asia, of course, have had Christian missionaries for years and years but their culture is still completely and comprehensively pagan. There is no element of Christianity that is involved in their cultures from a legislative standpoint, from a judicial standpoint, from a religious standpoint, from an educational standpoint.

Crucial then to the effort of evangelization is this entire text of chapters 2 and 3 in Titus because here he is calling for Titus to teach the churches how to live. The issue of evangelization is not cleverness and gimmickry, it's not entertainment, it's not marketing strategy. It's not figuring out what the cultural hot buttons are and punching them all. That is not it. All of the money and time and energy and effort going to that is just so much uselessness. People are saved because a sovereign God redeems them upon the hearing of a powerful testimony of the gospel. That's how salvation works. It's not a matter of gimmickry or technique or whatever, ingenuity. Most churches think that that's the way you reach the world, Paul is saying the way you reach the world is to demonstrate what a saved person looks like. And it's so stark and it's so dramatic and it's so marvelous and it's so exciting and it's so unique and it's so different and so compelling that people come to find out whether God will save them the way He saved those whose lives they've seen. That's evangelization God's way.

And so, in this wonderful little epistle, Paul is calling on Titus to make sure the church is in the position to do that. Chapter 1 he says you've got to have the right leadership. Obviously if people are to live godly lives, you've got to have godly leaders. So he gives them all of the qualifications for godly leaders starting there in verse 5, ordaining the right kind of elders, taking all the way down through verse 9, these who are godly leaders then lead in proclaiming the truth and the people follow them. In contrast to that you have the false teachers in verses 10 to 16, their doctrine is wrong and their lives are detestable and disobedient and worthless. They are rebellious, empty talkers. Over against the false teachers who demonstrate nothing but the wrong thing and all their followers who demonstrate also the wrong thing is the true church preaching the true gospel and living transformed lives.

Now what is the character of these lives to be? Chapter 2 tells how Christians are to live in the church. Chapter 3 how they are to live in the world. Chapter 2 he says older men are to live a certain way, younger men, older women, younger women, slaves, everybody is to live in a certain way to put God's saving power on display in order to, verse 5 says, make the Word of God not be dishonored, verse 8 to silence the opponents who want to criticize your faith and in order, verse 10 says, to adorn the doctrine of God as a saving God in every respect. As the Christian lives a holy life in the church, as the life of the church is pure and holy and undefiled and all that God wants it to be, the watching world sees transformed lives. And since the end of chapter 2 says God is a saving God and brings salvation to all men, He wants to put His saving power on display and that's why He has redeemed us, verse 14, and purified us and made us zealous for good works so that people can see what a saved life is like.

Then he comes into chapter 3 and says here it's also important not only how you live in the church but how you live in the world. And you remember verses 1 and 2, we studied them last week. He says you remind them, be subject to rulers, to authorities, to be obedient, to be ready for every good deed, to malign no one, to be uncontentious, gentle, showing every consideration for all men.

In the society and in the culture you are to live this way so that they also will see your transformed life, not only in regard to how you treat other Christians, but how you live within the society itself. And we looked at that opening verse or two last time under the heading, "Remember your duty...remember your duty." If we are to know how to live in a pagan culture, we have to remember our duty. And there were seven duties given there...seven of them. Be subject to rulers, to authorities. We bow the knee. We don't fight the system. We don't attack it. We don't revolt. We aren't revolutionaries. We aren't protesters. We are subject. Then to be obedient. Whatever the law says we comply and we obey. We are eager to do every positive good, we're not just knuckling under, we're not just bending our back and bowing our knee, we are glad, eager, anxious to pursue every good deed we can within our society. Verse 2, we never malign anybody. We don't speak evil of people. We don't blast them. We don't curse them. We don't malign their name, their character. We are not contentious, we don't fight, we don't pick fights, we don't retaliate. We are not pugilists. And we are gentle. What is that? Meek, and we show every possible kindness to everyone in our society, including our President and our leaders and all those in authority and the people that we are employed by and who are over us and are teachers and all the way down.

So if we are to know how to behave in a pagan society, first of all Paul says, we must remember our duty and it's very clear. We went over that in detail. And the reason is why? Because God desires to save. And our lives are the platform on which salvation is proclaimed believably. It's the same thing we saw in 1 Timothy 2. You are to be under the king and all those in authority over you and you are to pray for them and you are to live a quite and peaceable life and a godly life and a wise and careful and thoughtful life and to be a good citizen. Why? Because God desires all men to be saved. And what makes the gospel believable is not fighting Christians, not protesting Christians, not politicizing Christians, not Christians who want to start an anti-Christian defamation league, not Christians who want to damn and curse and consign to hell the media. What makes Christianity attractive is winsomeness, is people who are covered, as it were, in the righteousness of Christ and who manifest His love. Remember your duties, he says.

Secondly, and this is where we'll pick it up, remember your former condition. To have a proper response in a pagan culture you must remember your former condition. Look at verse 3, "For we also once ourselves were..." and then he gives a list of seven vices. Seven virtues in verses 1 and 2, seven

vices here in verse 3. "We also once ourselves were foolish, disobedient, deceived, enslaved to various lusts and pleasures, spending our life in malice and envy, hateful, hating one another."

Listen, before you get slanderous, before you get angry at those in authority in your country and those around you who are in sin and those who have an immoral agenda, before you get hostile and slanderous and angry and before you court those kinds of emotions that lead to venomous kinds of acts and thoughts of vengeance, before you become inconsiderate, before you fight for the cultural Christian agenda, before you attack the ungodly and attack the unsaved, Paul says remember once you were one of them. Did you forget? Did you forget? Did you forget that you used to be like that and you couldn't do anything about it? And there you have in verse 3 another one of those lists that Paul loves to give, you find them in Romans 1, 1 Corinthians 6, Galatians 5, Ephesians 4, one of those lists that defines the universal and comprehensive depth of human fallenness. All of us were like that. Paul himself was a blasphemer, he says in 1 Timothy 1, and a persecutor, and a violent aggressor, but he did it ignorantly in unbelief. As if to say, I did it because I didn't know any better.

You look at the gay agenda and you watch the homosexual pride parade and you listen to all the lesbian advocacy and you see all of the Playboy mentality and the filth and the pornography of our time and you watch this agenda being pushed on the social institutions and taught to your children, everything from sex education to passing out birth control devices and all of the stuff going on and something in you becomes hostile to all of that and you've got to stop and realize that the people doing that are doing it in utter ignorance. Look at verse 3, you were once foolish. What does that mean? They lacked understanding. They are completely ignorant, anoetos, without knowledge, without understanding. They don't know what they're doing. Ephesians 4:18 says basically the same thing, that the Gentiles are darkened in their understanding, excluded from the life of God because of the ignorance that is in them because of the hardness of their hearts. They're dark, they're ignorant. The god of this world has blinded their minds which compounds the darkness. And naturally they cannot understand the things of God, says Paul in his letter to the Corinthians.

So what do you expect? As soon as you knock the pinions out from under cultural Christianity and there aren't any restraints, their ignorance is going to take over. As soon as there's no compelling biblical criteria, they're left to their own devices and this is what you should expect. This is unbelievers acting like unbelievers. This is depravity manifesting itself. I suppose you thought that somehow the more intelligent people came, the more likely they were to approximate a biblical morality...wrong, absolutely wrong. If you want a good insight into that, pick up a book written by Paul Johnson called *The Intellectuals*. He is probably the foremost historian in our world today of western civilization and you will go through the most unbelievable morass of filth in reading about the intellectual philosophical architects of contemporary western culture and you will find out that those men who were smart enough to design the whole culture in which you live were the most debauched human beings on the face of the earth...and their lives would make a black mark on a piece of coal. Intelligence and education has nothing to contribute to morality.

Now I think...we're shocked, I think, when we look at institutions of higher education because we assume there is some...something so reasonable about biblical morality, so intelligent about biblical morality that smart people who study carefully would come to wise conclusions. But they cannot override their depravity. They're ignorant no matter how educated, no matter how many Ph.Ds they have, they're blind and ignorant and darkened. What do we expect from them? Nothing more than what their own depravity could engineer.

Then he says they're disobedient. To God? Of course and consequently to all authority instituted by God. There is in the heart of man rebellion. It is bound up in his heart. It's bound up in his fallenness. That's why you spank your children, to knock the rebelliousness under some control. But where God isn't there and the Spirit isn't there to restrain it, lawless resistance to truth and virtue will run amuck...and that is just depravity doing what depravity does. And we haven't seen it fully in American in the past because we did have some residue of Christian constraint in the system. That is all gone and now we're going to see depravity like it was seen in pagan Greek culture. We will be more the kind of church the church used to be in its early beginnings. They are disobedient. They are disobedient to God and to authority. They care not for the Bible. They laugh and mock at the Scripture overtly or covertly. They are resistant to truth and virtue.

Then he says thirdly, they are deceived. That's that verb again that gives us the word planet. They just wander around in space. They are not moored. They are not anchored. They just wander. It literally means they are led astray. They are perverted in mind and will and action. Their major thing is freedom. They just want to roam at all their impulses, nothing holds them down, nothing quantifies their life, nothing qualifies their life, they just live at whim. Whatever they feel. They are deceivers and they are deceived and they get worse and worse, 2 Timothy 3:13 says.

Now what's driving them? If they're ignorant and disobedient and deceived, they can't know the truth, they don't want to do the truth, they're led into all kinds of error, what is the driving force? Here it is, "They're enslaved to various lusts and pleasures...various lusts." A multitude of different epithumias, evil desires. It might be for money. It might be for sex. It might be for lesbian sex. It might be for homosexuality among men. It might be for power. It might be for food. It might be for alcohol. It might be for drugs. It might be for murder. It might be for rape. It might be for who knows what all. They are driven by the only impulse they have within them and that is their lust. And he adds pleasures from which we get the word hedonism, hedone, pleasures. They live for what makes them feel good. They follow their passion and their pleasure.

So when you say, "Oh, isn't it a terrible thing? You know, we know there's immorality in the streets and we know there's homosexuality in the streets, but when it happens in the Congress or when it happens in the Senate, or when immorality happens in the President's cabinet, isn't it terrible that men who have the public trust and men who are lifted up don't live moral lives?" My friend, they don't have the capacity to live a moral life. They're going to live the same kind of life that the guy in the street is going to live, they're just going to be more sophisticated at it because they're going to be slaves, bondslaves, *douloos*, they're going to be slaves to their lusts and their pleasures. That's all there is for them.

And as a result, they will spend, he says, this is all of us, we also were spending our life...now he's not saying we did it now and then or we once did it or we might do it, or there's a chance we could do it, he's saying we did it all our life in malice and envy. Malice means just plain wickedness, *kakia*, deep wickedness, but it has the idea of a malicious wickedness that wants to hurt and harm and take what it wants at the price...at any price really for another to pay.

So what do you have? First of all you have an ignorant person, an ignorant person and a disobedient person. And because they can't know the truth, don't know the truth, don't respond to the truth, they then wander all over the place and the only thing that leads them is their passion and it leads to lust and pleasure. And once they get a taste of lust and pleasure, they spend their whole life on consuming this kind of thing to the extent that they have evil intent toward everybody, that they seek everything they

can get and don't care who has to pay the price for it. Malice and envy...envy means ill will. There's a malicious evil and an ill will bound up in the fallenness of man. They never get satisfaction because lust is never satisfied, pleasure is never lasting and so they continue to consume and to consume and whatever anybody else has that gets in the way, they become angry and hostile and malicious and envious and it feeds...envy is the sin that feeds on the living and it wants to consume them. And that leads ultimately to the end of verse 3, hateful and hating one another. They then become literally consumed with hating anybody who stands in their way, they're self-centered to the degree where they hate anyone that is at all an obstacle to them or a problem to them or anybody who disagrees with them or stands in their way or takes issue with them. And then ultimately they come to the place where they hate everybody but themselves because that's where depravity ultimately goes, it goes to ego and ego says I want what I want when I want it and you get out of my way cause I'm getting it. That's why they can't maintain marriages. That's why parents can't get along with each other. That's why children hate parents, parents hate children. The ultimate agenda of fallen man is pride and pride isolates him from everybody. That's the picture.

Now what do you expect people like that to come up with? What kind of system do you expect them to come up with? Well just sit back and watch cause you're going to see it. You're seeing it right now and it's exactly what we would presume. Blind to God and therefore blind to all spiritual reality, rebellious to God's law and resistant completely to His truth. Utterly deceived about what is true and what is right, in complete bondage to mindless passion and living only for pleasure, they feed on the living by perverse treatment of others so that they are detested by the rest of the egotists and everybody winds up hating everybody.

Now what kind of world do you think they're going to develop? They're going to develop the kind of world you see. Just remember, would you, that you were there once too. And if you were saved when you were a small child, as we shall see in a moment, except for the grace of God you'd be a part of the same blindness. So before you eagerly rush to mistreat the pagans who offend you and who are destroying all vestiges of Christian influence, consider your own depravity. They are depraved. And so were you before you were saved and you were no different than them. And that's what we expect. And so you've got to look at them as Jesus looked at them and see them sadly on their way to hell and unable to do anything other than what they're doing. Yes there is a rebellion in them, yes there is an animosity toward God, there is a vitriolic attitude toward what is true, and yes it is reprehensible and yes God will condemn them and punish them in eternal hell if they don't turn from their sin and believe in Him, but at the same time God so loved the world. And we've got to be able to cope with the sin and see the iniquity for what it is and confront it for what it is without becoming malicious rebels who hate the very culture God has called us to reach. If Jesus could sit and look over at the city of Jerusalem and weep for their apostasy, can we look over our nation and weep? Remember your duty, he says, and remember your former condition.

There's a third point here. If we're going to have a proper perspective in a pagan culture we must remember our salvation. So he says to Titus, you tell them to remember your salvation. And here comes seven aspects of salvation. There were seven virtues in verses 1 and 2, seven vices in verse 3 and now there are seven aspects of salvation in verses 4 through 7. Verses 4 through 7 is one sentence, one long sentence that sweeps over the reality of salvation to remind us that the only reason we're different is because of God, not us, right? Nothing is worse than smug self-righteousness. Nothing is worse than Christians sitting around damning all of the unconverted people because of the fact that we're better than they are. Listen, my friend, the only reason you're not one of them on the way to hell is because of God's grace. You've got to remember that.

Look at verse 4, "When the kindness of God our Savior and His love for mankind appeared, He saved us, not on the basis of deeds which we have done in righteousness but according to His mercy by the washing of regeneration, renewing by the Holy Spirit whom He poured out upon us richly through Jesus Christ our Savior that being justified by His grace we might be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life." The only reason you're an heir and the only reason you have a hope of eternal life and the only reason you're justified and made right with God, and the only reason that you have come through Jesus Christ to receive the Holy Spirit, and the only reason you've been renewed and regenerated and washed, the only reason you've been saved is because God is merciful. That's what he's saying.

Now, you know, this particular passage of Scripture is a heaven of sorts to a theologian. There is so much here you could spend the rest of your life in those verses. It sweeps across the great glorious truths of salvation. And I'm not going to take the time to do that, next time we're going to go back into this thing and look a little more closely at those features. But for now I want you to feel the impact of the whole of what he is saying. Follow me through those verses again. Salvation was initiated by God, verse 4, "When the kindness of God our Savior and His love for mankind appeared." The initiative is with God. He came into the world showing His kindness and His love in the incarnation in Christ. He saved us. Again, His initiation. Not on the basis of something which we had done which was righteous and therefore earned it, but according to His mercy. He washed us, He regenerated us, He renewed us through the Holy Spirit, He poured out His Spirit on us through Christ, He justified us by His grace, He made us heirs and He gave us the hope of eternal life. It's all from Him.

So would you look at the unbeliever like that and would you say to yourself...he's not like me...listen carefully...because God has not done for him what He's done for me? You need to view him like that. When you are repulsed by the media and their anti-Christian agenda, when you are repulsed by the homosexuals and the lesbians and the fornicators and adulterers and all of that, and the educators and whoever else, the politicians, will you look at them and simply say...they're the way they are because God has not saved them? I'm the way I am because He saved me. Get the perspective.

When the kindness, verse 4 says, of God our Savior and His love for mankind appeared, what a great statement. Salvation is rooted in the love of God. Ephesians 2 talks about the great love wherewith He has loved us. That is why He gave us Christ. It is in God's kindness and God's love that our salvation resides. It is God our Savior, verse 10 of Titus chapter 2, it is Christ our Savior, verse 6 of chapter 3, as we've seen those same descriptive terms of God and Christ throughout the pastoral epistles, it all originates with them. His love appeared. His kindness appeared and He saved us. It is God who is the rescuer. God came down and rescued us. Verse 5, He saved us. That little three letters...three words rather, "He saved us," takes us to the cross and the resurrection. And He did it not on the basis of deeds which we have done. We didn't deserve our salvation. We didn't deserve our transformation, our deliverance from sin and death and hell was purely on God's love and God's kindness alone, nothing in us was worthy, we made no contribution to His plan, we made no contribution to His choice, we made no contribution to His work of salvation. He looked at us in pity and compassion and love and mercy and saved us. We deserve wrath, we got forgiveness. We are undeserved, we received what we do not earn. In fact, His mercy was uninfluenced and His grace was absolutely spontaneous. And yet He washed us. And the agent of washing is the Word, He regenerated us...that's speaking about the new birth, He renewed us.

All of that really looks at the same event, we were washed, that's one way to look at salvation, it's the cleansing of sin. We were regenerated, that's another way to look at salvation, it's new birth, new life,

palingenesia, that marvelous word. And then we were renewed, that's another way to look at the same event. We came out of that experience in newness of life, now living life on a completely different plane. All of that speaks of radical transformation initiated by God not according to anything we've done, we were radically transformed and then we were infused with the Holy Spirit who was poured out on us richly. We were then made right with God through all of that, verse 7 says, and became joint heirs with Christ in the hope of eternal life. Hummph...

All of that is simply to say one thing, look, the only reason you're different than the corrupt society around you is because God saved you. How can you hate those people who have never known the mercy of God? Can't you feel the same pity, the same compassion that God felt toward you?

And then in verse 8 the first little statement, "This is a trustworthy statement." Stop there. That really belongs with verses 4 to 7. That little phrase "this is a trustworthy statement" is a descriptive phrase used five times in the pastoral epistles, 1 and 2 Timothy and Titus. And it is used to identify a commonly known expression that was axiomatic. When you say something is an axiom, you mean it is a self-evident truth that doesn't need proof, it's just obvious. Apparently in the early church there were a number of self-evident axioms that had found their way into the repetitive vocabulary of Christians and they would frequently recite them. This appears to have been one of those from verses 4 to 7, some think it was a part of a creed, a commonly recited creed in the early church and others think it may well have been a part of a hymn. But it was one of those trustworthy statements. Sometimes you read that same phrase in Paul's letters to Timothy, "this is a trustworthy statement and worthy of all acceptance," it's the same basic phrase. It was something that was self-evident, something that everybody knew and he's simply saying this, you all know this for sure, you all know that salvation is by grace and grace alone. So before you become angry and hostile against the culture in which you live, remember that apart from the grace of God that's you...that's you.

So, how are we to live in a pagan society? One, we remember our duty. Two, we remember our former condition, and that helps us to understand they're only acting the way they act because that's the only way they can act. And thirdly, we remember our salvation, that it's only the grace of God that sets us apart from them. And as we have been pitied, so we should pity them. They are in a pitiful condition.

Finally, fourthly, if you want to live the way God wants you to live in a pagan culture, remember your mission. Remember your duty, your former condition, your salvation and remember your mission. Now into verse 8, "And concerning these things I want you to speak confidently so that those who have believed God may be careful to engage in good deeds. These things are good and profitable for men."

Now he reminds Titus to remind the church of their mission. He says to him, "Concerning these things," what things? All the things he's been writing, certainly since Titus chapter 2 verse 1. "As for you, speak the things which are fitting for sound doctrine, everything regarding sound doctrine," and then he goes and gives him a lot of things in chapter 2 and then in chapter 3. Now comes back to where he started in chapter 2 verse 1 and saying concerning these things I want you to speak confidently. Don't be hesitant, preach these things with boldness and conviction. The Greek verb is very intensive. It has added in the front of it *dia*, the intense preposition and it intensifies the verb, you are to speak confidently and intensely about these matters of Christian behavior.

That's what the church is about. When church comes together it comes together to be exhorted. As we saw in Titus chapter 2 verse 15, speak, exhort, reprove and don't let anybody disregard you, you do that with authority. You remind them, verse 1 of Titus chapter 3. Now he says you speak these things

confidently. When the church comes together, the church is to be addressed. You need to be here every week so that you can be stimulated to love and good works. The matter of evangelism is at stake and how you live your life is at stake and you need to be stimulated week in and week out to godliness. So he says, "Titus, you speak these things confidently, these matters of behavior in a pagan culture and these matters of behavior in the church that we talked about in Titus chapter 2, you speak them unhesitatingly so that those who have believed God."

That is a great phrase. Not who have believed in God, but who have believed God. What is that? Those who take God at His Word...that's a definition of Christians. Who are Christians? They're not just people who believe in God, a lot of people believe in God. They're people who take God's Word seriously. They believe God when He speaks. Eighty percent of the people in America believe in God. But I'll promise you right now, a very small percentage believe God when He speaks. And that's the issue here. He's talking about the believers who believe the Word of God. You can speak it confidently because those who take God at His Word are going to respond and be careful to engage in good deeds. They're going to take the lead in doing what is excellent. They're going to give very careful thoughtful devoted attention to the matter of spiritual living. People who take God seriously are going to do that.

Part of the problem in the church today is we've got people who say they believe in God, who say they're Christians, who are in the church and they don't take God's Word seriously, do they? But they're passed off as Christians and that's part of the confusion in the society. You speak confidently and you speak to the Christians those who take God's Word seriously and they'll be careful to engage in good deeds and these things then are good and profitable for men.

What does that mean? They lead to the salvation of lost souls because they demonstrate transformed lives, they bring light and life and peace and joy and salvation.

We have a great challenge in our beloved country. And I think the church is missing the whole approach. We have an increasingly paganized nation and some Christians are jumping on the political bandwagon trying to impact the culture quote/unquote. That's not our goal, that's not our purpose, that's not our calling. Other Christians are trying to come up with more clever strategy for evangelism and feel if they can find all the marketing tools and all of the hot buttons and push them properly, people are going to get saved because the technique is so clever. And so they turn the church into an entertainment center for unbelievers who want to come and be entertained. And hopefully if they're entertained enough to get real happy and real enthusiastic, they'll decide that they want to become Christians.

That's not how it's done, folks. You might get a crowd and you might even preach the gospel and have some people saved, but you're going to have immature carnal ignorant believers whose lives are not going to demonstrate to the culture the transforming saving power of God. When the church comes together, it comes together to be spoken to with boldness and called to holy living and out of the Word of God because those who take the Word of God seriously are going to engage in the good deeds that are going to become good and profitable for the watching world. That's the mandate. We can't just be sad. We can't certainly be hostile. We've got to pray for those in our culture and our society who are lost. We've got to pity them and love them with the love of God and show them Christ's saving power in our lives. The church does not need now to become more like the world, it needs to become utterly and distinctively the church so that there is such an obvious difference that the world can see it clearly. We're doing exactly the opposite and that's the tragedy. For us here we have a mandate, we can't fix

everything but we can be what God wants us to be here. And God will in His grace use us to bring many to righteousness.

Father, we thank You again this morning for Your Word. We are a people who can say we believe You. If You speak we listen. We take Your Word seriously and we want, Lord, to live the kind of lives that You want us to live so that we can demonstrate a transformed person is like. And then they'll know You have transforming power. Help us to live holy lives, lives of compassion and love, lives of grace and kindness and mercy that they might see in us the first born of heaven, even Jesus Christ and His love and compassion and pity and His virtue. And seeing what we are might conclude their God is a saving God and come themselves for salvation. To this end we pray for Christ's sake. Amen.

7.15 How to Teach Your Child About Politics¹⁰⁶

Because I write about politics, people are forever asking me the best way to teach children how our system of government works. I tell them that they can give their own children a basic civics course right in their own homes. In my own experience as a father, I have discovered several simple devices that can illustrate to a child's mind the principles on which the modern state deals with its citizens. You may find them helpful, too.

For example, I used to play the simple card game WAR with my son. After a while, when he thoroughly understood that the higher ranking cards beat the lower ranking ones, I created a new game I called GOVERNMENT. In this game, I was Government, and I won every trick, regardless of who had the better card. My boy soon lost interest in my new game, but I like to think it taught him a valuable lesson for later in life.

When your child is a little older, you can teach him about our tax system in a way that is easy to grasp. Offer him, say, \$10 to mow the lawn. When he has mowed it and asks to be paid, withhold \$5 and explain that this is income tax. Give \$1 to his younger brother, and tell him that this is "fair". Also, explain that you need the other \$4 yourself to cover the administrative costs of dividing the money. When he cries, tell him he is being "selfish" and "greedy". Later in life he will thank you.

Make as many rules as possible. Leave the reasons for them obscure. Enforce them arbitrarily. Accuse your child of breaking rules you have never told him about. Keep him anxious that he may be violating commands you haven't yet issued. Instill in him the feeling that rules are utterly irrational. This will prepare him for living under democratic government.

When your child has matured sufficiently to understand how the judicial system works, set a bedtime for him and then send him to bed an hour early. When he tearfully accuses you of breaking the rules, explain that you made the rules and you can interpret them in any way that seems appropriate to you, according to changing conditions. This will prepare him for the Supreme Court's concept of the U.S. Constitution as a "living document". Promise often to take him to the movies or the zoo, and then, at the appointed hour, recline in an easy chair with a newspaper and tell him you have changed your plans. When he screams, "But you promised!", explain to him that it was a campaign promise. Every now and then, without warning, slap your child. Then explain that this is defense. Tell him that you must be vigilant at all times to stop any potential enemy before he gets big enough to hurt you. This, too, your child will appreciate, not right at that moment, maybe, but later in life. At times your child will naturally express discontent with your methods. He may even give voice to a petulant wish that he lived with another

¹⁰⁶ Joseph Sobran.

family. To forestall and minimize this reaction, tell him how lucky he is to be with you the most loving and indulgent parent in the world, and recount lurid stories of the cruelties of other parents. This will make him loyal to you and, later, receptive to schoolroom claims that the America of the postmodern welfare state is still the best and freest country on Earth.

This brings me to the most important child-rearing technique of all: lying. Lie to your child constantly. Teach him that words mean nothing - or rather that the meanings of words are continually "evolving", and may be tomorrow the opposite of what they are today.

Some readers may object that this is a poor way to raise a child. A few may even call it child abuse. But that's the whole point: Child abuse is the best preparation for adult life under our form of GOVERNMENT.

That having been said, let's compare what the Supreme Court has to say about this kind of despicable behavior by the government:

"Decency, Security, and liberty alike demand that government officials shall be subjected to the same rules of conduct that are commands to the citizen. In a government of laws, existence of the government will be imperiled if it fails to observe the law scrupulously. Our government is the potent, the omnipresent teacher. For good or ill, it teaches the whole people by its example. Crime is contagious. If the government becomes a lawbreaker, it breeds contempt for the law; it invites every man to become a law unto himself; it invites anarchy. To declare that in the administration of the criminal law the end justifies the means...would bring terrible retribution. Against that pernicious doctrine this Court should resolutely set its face."

[Justice Brandeis, *Olmstead v. United States*, 277 U.S. 438, 485. (1928)]

7.16 The Bill of No Rights

"We, the sensible people of the United States, in an attempt to help everyone get along, restore some semblance of Justice, avoid any more riots, keep our nation safe, promote positive behavior, and secure the blessings of debt-free liberty to ourselves and our great-great-great-grandchildren, hereby try one more time to ordain and establish some common sense guidelines for the terminally whiny, guilt-ridden, deluded, and other liberal Bed-wetters.

We hold these truths to be self-evident: that a whole lot of people are confused by the Bill of Rights and are so dim that they require a Bill of No Rights."

ARTICLE I: You do not have the right to a new car, big screen TV or any other form of wealth. More power to you if you can legally acquire them, but no one is guaranteeing anything.

ARTICLE II: You do not have the right to never be offended. This country is based on freedom, and that means freedom for everyone - not just you! You may leave the room, change the channel, express a different opinion, etc., but the world is full of idiots, and probably always will be.

ARTICLE III: You do not have the right to be free from harm. If you stick a screwdriver in your eye, learn to be more careful. Do not expect the tool manufacturer to make you and all your relatives independently wealthy.

ARTICLE IV: You do not have the right to free food and housing. Americans are the most charitable people to be found, and will gladly help anyone in need, but we are quickly growing weary of subsidizing generation after generation of professional couch potatoes who achieve nothing more than the creation of another generation of professional couch potatoes.

ARTICLE V: You do not have the right to free health care. That would be nice, but from the looks of public housing, we're just not interested in public health care.

ARTICLE VI: You do not have the right to physically harm other people. If you kidnap, rape, intentionally maim, or kill someone, don't be surprised if the rest of us want to see you fry in the electric chair.

ARTICLE VII: You do not have the right to the possessions of others. If you rob, cheat or coerce away the goods or services of other citizens, don't be surprised if the rest of us get together and lock you away in a place where you still won't have the right to a big screen color TV or a life of leisure.

ARTICLE VIII: You don't have the right to demand that our children risk their lives in foreign wars to soothe your aching conscience. We hate oppressive governments and won't lift a finger to stop you from going to fight if you'd like. However, we do not enjoy parenting the entire world and do not want to spend so much of our time battling each and every little tyrant with a military uniform and a funny hat.

ARTICLE IX: You don't have the right to a job. All of us sure want all of you to have one, and will gladly help you along in hard times, but we expect you to take advantage of the opportunities of education and vocational training laid before you to make yourself useful.

ARTICLE X: You do not have the right to happiness. Being an American means that you have the right to *pursue* happiness -- which, by the way, is a lot easier if you are unencumbered by an overabundance of idiotic laws created by those of you who were confused by the Bill of Rights.

7.17 Am I A Bad American?-Absolutely NOT!

Someone sent us this via email and we think it is so insightful and so descriptive about our social responsibilities here in America, we wanted to share it with all of you:

AM I A BAD AMERICAN?...I'M THINKING NOT!

I believe the money I make belongs to me and my family, not some middle-aged governmental functionary with a bad comb-over who wants to give it away to crack addicts making babies so that I can help support them.

I don't care about appearing compassionate. I already support causes that I believe are worthwhile, charitable, educational, and religious. I don't need any liberal minion on the government payroll to tell me how, when, or where I need to show compassion.

I think I'm doing better than the homeless and I absolutely should not feel guilty about it.

I don't think being a minority makes you noble nor victimized.

I don't think playing with toy guns makes you a killer.

I believe it's called the Boy Scouts for a reason.

I have the right not to be tolerant of others. There are a lot of screwed up people out there; card-carrying members of the largest cult in society - dysfunction. As long as I'm responsible for me and my own legal behavior, I don't have to tolerate those assholes, no matter their race, creed, or color.

I like big houses, cars, boats, and planes.

I believe that if you are selling me Dairy Queen ice cream, a KFC box of chicken, or a hotel room - you do it in English. As a matter of fact, if you are going to live in this country, you should learn to read and speak English. That would be the civil thing to do. English happens to also be the dominant language on the Internet. Gee, I wonder why? Our ancestors did not have to die in vain so that someone could leave the country they were born in to come here and disrespect ours.

I think the cops have every right to shoot your sorry ass if you're running from them after they tell you to stop. If you can't understand the word "freeze," or "stop!" in English, see the previous line.

I don't use the excuse "it's for the children" as a shield for stupid opinions or actions.

If I received oral sex from one of my subordinate employees in my office, it wouldn't be "a private matter" or my "personal business." I would have been FIRED immediately.

I know what the definition of lying is. I know what the definition of "is" is, too...

I don't think that just because you were not born in this country, you qualify for some special loan program, government sponsored bank loan, etc., so you can open a hotel, convenience store, trinket shop, or anything else. That is bullshit.

I believe that no one ever died because of something Ozzy Osbourne, Eminem or Marilyn Manson sang, but that doesn't mean I want to listen to that crap from someone else's car when I'm stopped at a red light. But I respect your right to be really stupid.

I don't think that being a student gives you any more enlightenment than working at Blockbuster Video or Jack In The Box.

We did not go to some foreign country and risk lives in vain to defend our constitution so that decades later you can tell us it's a living document ever changing and is open to interpretation.

I don't hate the rich. If they invented it, built it, sold it, and/or serviced it - I respect them. The only rich I cannot respect are those who inherited it.

I don't pity the poor.

I've never owned a slave. Neither did my father, or his father, or his father, etc. If you go back far enough you can find shitty circumstances that impacted most of our predecessors' lives. Get over it. Equal opportunity means you do the same and you get the same - not you do less and expect more.

I believe a self-righteous liberal with a cause is more dangerous than an armed Hell's Angel with an attitude.

I own a gun, you can own a gun, and any red blooded American should be allowed to own a gun, but if you use it in a crime then you will serve the time. Not probation and not

a plea bargain - you serve time. And clean up our highways while you do the time. By the way, a rubber band and a sharp paper clip is a dangerous weapon in the hands of someone with malicious intent.

I worry about dying before I get even.

I think Bill Gates has every right to keep every penny he made and continue to make more. If it pisses you off, invent something better and put your name on the building.

We don't need more laws ! Let's enforce the ones we already have.

It doesn't take a village to raise a child, it takes a parent with the balls to stand up to the kid and spank his butt and say "NO !" Discipline means to instruct, correct and punish. Good parents do that.

I think tattoos and piercing are fine if you want them, but please don't pretend they are a political statement.

I didn't realize Dr. Seuss was a genius until I had a kid.

I will not be frowned upon or be looked down upon or be made to keep silent because I have these beliefs and opinions. This country guarantees me that right. I will not conform or compromise just to keep from hurting somebody's feelings. We, the silent responsible majority, expect reasonable, moderate behavior from our friends and our neighbors, not to mention our politicians.

Don't take my time or tax dollars for anything else.

I am sick to death of "Political Correctness."

I'm neither angry nor disenfranchised, no matter how desperately the media would like the world to believe otherwise.

I am not a bad American, I am a Great American !!

7.18 If Noah Were Alive Today

And the Lord spoke to Noah and said, "In one year, I am going to make it Rain and cover the whole earth with water until all flesh is destroyed.

But I want you to save the righteous people and two of every kind of living Thing on the earth. Therefore, I am commanding you to build an Ark." In a flash of lightening, God delivered the specifications for an Ark. In fear and trembling, Noah took the plans and agreed to build the Ark. "Remember" said the Lord, "You must complete the Ark and bring everything aboard in one year." Exactly one-year later, fierce storm clouds covered the earth and all the seas of the earth went into a tumult. The Lord saw that Noah was sitting in his front yard weeping. "CHRISTIANS:Noah", He shouted. "Where is the Ark?"

"Lord, please forgive me!" cried Noah. "I did my best, but there were big problems. First, I had to get a permit for construction and your plans did not meet the codes. I had to hire an engineering firm and redraw the plans.

Then I got into a fight with OSHA over whether or not the Ark needed a Fire sprinkler system and floatation devices. Then my neighbor objected, claiming I was violating zoning ordinances by building the Ark in my front yard, so I had to get a variance from the city planning commission. Then I had problems getting enough wood for the Ark, because there was a ban on cutting trees to protect the Spotted Owl. I finally convinced the US Forest Service that I needed the wood to save the owls. However, the Fish and Wildlife Service won't let me catch any owls. So, no owls. The carpenters formed a union and went out on strike. I had to negotiate a settlement with the National Labor Relations Board before anyone would pick up a saw or a hammer. Now I have 16 carpenters on the Ark, but still no owls.

When I started rounding up the other animals, I was sued by an animal rights group. They objected to me only taking two of each kind aboard. Just when I got the suit dismissed, the EPA notified me that I could not complete the Ark without filing an Environmental impact statement on your proposed flood. They didn't taken very kindly to The idea that they had no jurisdiction over the conduct of the Creator of The universe. Then the Army Engineers demanded a map of the proposed new Flood plain. I sent them a globe. Right now, I am trying to resolve a Complaint filed with the Equal Employment Opportunity Commission that I am practicing discrimination by not taking godless, unbelieving people aboard.

The IRS has seized my assets, claiming that I'm building the Ark in preparation to Flee the country to avoid paying taxes. I just got a notice from the state that I owe them some kind of user tax and failed to register the Ark as a "recreational water craft." Finally, the ACLU (the American Communist Lawyers Union) got the courts to issue an injunction against further construction of the Ark, saying that since God is flooding the earth, it is a religious event and therefore, unconstitutional. I really don't think I can finish the Ark for another five or six years." Noah wailed. The sky began to clear; the sun began to shine and the seas began to calm. A rainbow arched across the sky. Noah looked up hopefully.

"You mean You are not going to destroy the earth Lord?"

"No," said the Lord sadly. "I don't have to. The government already has."

7.19 Prayer at the Opening of the Kansas Senate

When minister Joe Wright was asked to open the new session of the Kansas Senate, everyone was expecting the usual politically correct generalities, but what they heard instead was a stirring prayer, passionately calling our country to repentance and righteousness.

The response was immediate. A number of legislators walked out during the prayer in protest. In six short weeks, the Central Christian Church had logged more than 5,000 phone calls with only 47 of those calls responding negatively. The church is now receiving international requests for copies of the prayer from India, Africa and Korea.

Commentator PAUL HARVEY aired the prayer on *The Rest of the Story* on the radio and received a larger response to this program than any other he has ever aired!

THE PRAYER

Heavenly Father, we come before you today to ask Your forgiveness and to seek Your direction and guidance. We know Your Word says, "Woe on those who call evil good,"

but that's exactly what we have done. We have lost our spiritual equilibrium and reversed our values. We confess that:

We have ridiculed the absolute truth of Your Word and called it pluralism.

We have worshiped other gods and called it multiculturalism.

We have endorsed perversion and called it an alternative lifestyle.

We have exploited the poor and called it the lottery.

We have neglected the needy and called it self-preservation.

We have rewarded laziness and called it welfare.

We have killed our unborn children and called it a choice.

We have shot abortionists and called it justifiable.

We have neglected to discipline our children and called it building self-esteem.

We have abused power and called it political savvy.

We have coveted our neighbor's possessions and called it ambition.

We have polluted the air with profanity and pornography and called it freedom of expression.

We have ridiculed the time-honored values of our forefathers and called it enlightenment.

Search us, O God, and know our hearts today; cleanse us from every sin and set us free. Guide and bless these men and women who have been sent to direct us to the center of Your will. I ask it in the name of Your Son, the living Savior, Jesus Christ. Amen.

7.20 The Ghost of Valley Forge



I had a dream the other night I didn't understand,
A figure walking through the mist, with flintlock in his hand.

His clothes were torn and dirty, as he stood there by my bed,
He took off his three-cornered hat, and speaking low he said:

"We fought a revolution to secure our liberty,
We wrote the Constitution, as a shield from tyranny.

For future generations, this legacy we gave,
In this, the land of the free and home of the brave.

The freedom we secured for you, we hoped you'd always keep,
But tyrants labored endlessly while your parents were asleep.

Your freedom gone -- your courage lost -- you're no more than a slave,
In this, the land of the free and the home of the brave.

You buy permits to travel, and permits to own a gun,
Permits to start a business, or to build a place for one.

On land that you believe you own, you pay a yearly rent,
Although you have no voice in choosing how the money's spent.

Your children must attend a school that doesn't educate,
Your moral values can't be taught, according to the state.

You read about the current "news" in a very biased press,
You pay a tax you do not owe, to please the IRS.

Your money is no longer made of silver or of gold,
You trade your wealth for paper, so life can be controlled.

You pay for crimes that make our Nation turn from God to shame,
You've taken Satan's number, as you've traded in your name.

You've given government control to those who do you harm,
So they can padlock churches, and steal the family farm.

And keep our country deep in debt, put men of God in jail,
Harass your fellow countryman while corrupted courts prevail.

Your public servants don't uphold the solemn oath they've sworn,
Your daughters visit doctors so children won't be born.

Your leaders ship artillery and guns to foreign shores,
And send your sons to slaughter, fighting other people's wars.

Can you regain your Freedom for which we fought and died?
Or don't you have the courage, or the faith to stand with pride?

Are there no more values for which you'll fight to save?
Or do you wish your children live in fear and be a slave?

Sons of the Republic, arise and take a stand!
Defend the Constitution, the Supreme Law of the Land!

Preserve our Republic, and each God-given right!
And pray to God to keep the torch of freedom burning bright!"

As I awoke he vanished, in the mist from whence he came,
His words were true, we are not free, and we have ourselves to blame.

For even now as tyrants trample each God-given right,
We only watch and tremble -- too afraid to stand and fight.

If he stood by your bedside in a dream while you're asleep,
And wonder what remains of your right he fought to keep.

What would be your answer if he called out from the grave?
Is this still the land of the free and home of the brave?

7.21 Last Will and Testament of Jesse Cornish

"A good man leaves an inheritance to his children's children, but the wealth of the sinner is stored up for the righteous."
[[Prov. 13:22](#), Bible, NKJV]

Last Will and Testament Of Jesse Franklin Cornish

I, Jesse Cornish, being of sound mind. do of my own accord, make this last will, bequeathing all of my earthly possessions as follows:

To my son, Jesse, and my daughter, Candy, I leave all my owned real estate and equities and all my liquid assets in the form of checking, savings, and other money accounts to share and share alike.

Family Constitution, version 1.30

Copyright Family Guardian Fellowship

<http://famguardian.org>

To my son, Jesse, I leave my guns, fishing gear, boats and all other personal effects a father would normally pass on to his son.

To my daughter, Candy, I leave the things her mother left. I leave her also certain family treasures, and pieces or collected art described on the attached sheets.

To both my son, Jesse, and my daughter, Candy, I leave my total collection of African art goods. my automobiles. items of jewelry, photographs, music albums, and all household valuables to share and share alike.

To my grandchildren, I leave the faith and hope that your parents will pass on to you whatever is left of this bequest on their demise. And to this I pray that they will add their lot. The bequests I have named appear in the will that is to be probated. It is already in the hands of my lawyers who will see it through for you.

In your own safe-deposit boxes, where you found this private copy is a sealed letter addressed to each of you. You may open it now. Inside you will find specific instructions leading you to the location of special forms of assets I have secured and left for you. This wealth may well be the only thing of real value I have to pass on to you.

It is in the form of gold and silver coins and bullion. Nobody knows I bought it, there is no record of them, and nobody knows where they are except you today.

I did not buy it to speculate. I bought it to get out of paper assets and to preserve capital.

The bullion coins are worth five times what I paid for them and some of the numismatic coins have appreciated over 6000 percent in the last ten years. As the next inflationary cycle reaches double digit, their values will also double.

The numismatic, rare coins along with their certification are in the packets here that bear your names. In your names also are these storage receipts from the warehouses in Montreal and Dallas. They represent the numerous pieces of fine ivory and ebony art carvings I brought out of Africa over the years. You may claim them in person at any time. All of these items are in demand and maintain high liquidity.

I depart this life with the prayer that you will have the foresight and self discipline to leave it as it is until this nation regains fiscal sanity. When that finally comes about, there will be complete monetary reform.

Your gold, silver, and ivory will buy this new form of currency and could well be your only hope for financial survival. When I purchased the uncirculated coins to put away for you, I was afraid and didn't buy enough. Now I see they have provided the highest appreciation of all, and any further additions to this private part of my bequests to you will include more of the same. It grieves me to inform you that I have also passed on to you a "Legacy of Debt."

My generation found a way to lead the good life by borrowing from yours. We have lived out the last thirty years in a credit "dream world" of luxury and affluence and monetized the massive debt by offering the next two generations as collateral. The material wealth I leave to you will not even begin

to pay your share of the bill we ran up during your lifetime and it will haunt you and cause you to ask, "How could my dad do this?"

Please know it was not what I did, but rather, what I failed to do. I just didn't bother to get personally involved in the affairs of government at any level.

I filled my days to earn large sums of dollars and spent too many nights celebrating when I did. Like millions of others, I stood by as inept elected officials bought votes with your money and changed America from a capitalistic, free enterprise nation to a land ever-approaching mandated socialism.

The conventional investments I planned for your future failed the break-even point years ago. Savings, common stocks, and money funds were tied to the shrinking dollar and eroded away with inflation and taxes, just as they will when this economy turns around to monetize the most massive debt in history.

Over the past 15 years, most of my income was taken away in taxes to finance the enormous bureaucracy that now has a strangle hold on every aspect of our economy.

Even as I write this. I see the vultures circling -waiting to pick apart the probated portion of this will that was already riddled with taxes as I tried to keep it alive.

My final prayer is that you will use my shortcomings as a warning light to guide your way. And that you will try to find forgiveness in your hearts for the things I failed to do.

Get involved. Help get America back into the hands of the earners and the producers.

From my generation you have learned that you cannot feed and house the whole world. You also learned that the nation's banks do not deserve blind faith. 60 of them failed this past year and 750 more are in trouble with assets represented by over-extended credit.

Don't be afraid of what lies out there ahead, and don't ever feel guilty about what you earned yourself. Don't let elected officials give it away to the plunderers for the sake of re-election and self enrichment.

When the day comes for you to retire, the Social Security program will be bankrupt and gone. I paid into it for nearly forty years but never withdrew a dime.

There is an automatic \$275 burial fee you could withdraw for my funeral expenses. I have already designated funds to cover this so please turn it down and afford me the last dignity of paying my own way out.

In everlasting love,

Your dad,

Jesse Cornish

Jesse F. Cornish

State of Minnesota
County of Hennepin

Signed, sealed and delivered by Jesse F. Cornish this 17th day of November, 1980

Family Constitution, version 1.30

Copyright Family Guardian Fellowship

<http://famguardian.org>

7.22 My Country?

Is the country described below the type of place you would be proud to call your home and your country? Is it still the “land of the free and home of the brave?” We don’t think so. Instead, our government steals our money, uses it to subsidize failure and socialism, and then asks for yet more money to correct the problems that such failed policies produce. Any civilization that subsidizes and encourages failure and irresponsibility and decadence on the scale and of the kind described below is doomed to certain self destruction. The question is not if our society will collapse, but how long, unless we mend our ways, repent for our sins, and engage ourselves politically to force change and capitalism once again.

*I come for visit, get treated regal,
So I stay, who care I illegal?
I cross border, poor and broke,
Take bus, see employment folk.*

*Nice man treat me good in there,
Say I need to see welfare.
Welfare say, "You come no more,
We send cash right to your door."*

*Welfare checks, they make you wealthy,
Medicaid it keep you healthy!
By and by, I got plenty money,
Thanks to you, American dummy.*

*Write to friends in motherland,
Tell them come as fast as you can.
They come in rags and Chebby trucks,
I buy big house with welfare bucks.*

*They come here, we live together,
More welfare checks, it gets better!
Fourteen families they moving in,
But neighbor's patience wearing thin.*

*Finally, white guy moves away,
Now I buy his house, and then I say,
"Find more aliens for house to rent."
And in the yard I put a tent.*

*Send for family (they just trash),
But they, too, draw the welfare cash!
Everything is mucho good,
And soon we own the neighborhood.*

*We have hobby--it's called breeding,
Welfare pay for baby feeding.
Kids need dentist? Wife need pills?
We get free! We got no bills!*

*American crazy! He pay all year,
To keep welfare running here.*

*We think America darn good place!
Too darn good for the white man race.*

*If they no like us, they can go,
Got lots of room in Mexico.*

SEND THIS TO EVERY AMERICAN TAXPAYER YOU KNOW.

7.23 Grateful Slave

We downloaded the poem below off the internet. Replace “Master” with “IRS” and “Federal Reserve” and you will know what the point of this book is all about. Our public servants have sold out our country chasing after the almighty dollar. We have become slaves of debt and slaves of the IRS and the Federal Reserve in the process.

GRATEFUL SLAVE

*I am a grateful slave.
My master is a good man.
He gives me food, shelter, work and other things.
All he requires in return is that I obey him.
I am told he has the power to control my life.
I look up to him, and wish that I were so powerful.
My master must understand the world better than I,
because he was chosen by many others for his respected position.
I sometimes complain, but fear I cannot live without his help.
He is a good man.
My master protects my money from theft, before and after he takes half of it.
Before taking his half, he says only he can protect my money.
After taking it, he says it is still mine.
When he spends my money, he says I own the things he has bought.
I don't understand this, but I believe him.
He is a good man.
I need my master for protection, because others would hurt me.
Or, they would take my money and use it for themselves.
My master is better than them:
When my master takes my money, I still own it.
The things he buys are mine.
I cannot sell them, or decide how they are used, but they are mine.
My master tells me so, and I believe him.
He is a good man.
My master provides free education for my children.
He teaches them to respect and obey him and all future masters they will have.
He says they are being taught well; learning things they will need to know in the future.
I believe him.
He is a good man.
My master cares about other masters, who don't have good slaves.
He makes me contribute to their support.
I don't understand why slaves must work for more than one master, but my master says it is necessary.
I believe him.
He is a good man.
Other slaves ask my master for some of my money.
Since he is good to them as he is to me, he agrees.
This means he must take more of my money; but he says this is good for me.
I ask my master why it would not be better to let each of us keep our own money.
He says it is because he knows what is best for each of us.*

We believe him.
He is a good man.
My master tells me:
Evil masters in other places are not as good as he; they threaten our comfortable lifestyle and peace.
So, he sends my children to fight the slaves of evil masters.
I mourn their deaths, but my master says it is necessary.
He gives me medals for their sacrifice, and I believe him.
He is a good man.
Good masters sometimes have to kill evil masters, and their slaves.
This is necessary to preserve our way of life; to show others that our version of slavery is the best.
I asked my master:
Why do evil masters' slaves have to be killed, along with their evil master?
He said: "Because they carry out his evil deeds."
"Besides, they could never learn our system; they have been indoctrinated to believe that only their master is good."
My master knows what is best.
He protects me and my children.
He is a good man.
My master lets me vote for a new master, every few years.
I cannot vote to have no master, but he generously lets me choose between two candidates he has selected.
I eagerly wait until election day, since voting allows me to forget that I am a slave.
Until then, my current master tells me what to do.
I accept this.
It has always been so, and I would not change tradition.
My master is a good man.
At the last election, about half the slaves were allowed to vote.
The other half had broken rules set by the master, or were not thought by him to be fit.
Those who break the rules should know better than to disobey!
Those not considered fit should gratefully accept the master chosen for them by others.
It is right, because we have always done it this way.
My master is a good man.
There were two candidates.
One received a majority of the vote - about one-fourth of the slave population.
I asked why the new master can rule over all the slaves, if he only received votes from one-fourth of them?
My master said: "Because some wise masters long ago did it that way."
"Besides, you are the slaves; and we are the master."
I did not understand his answer, but I believed him.
My master knows what is best for me.
He is a good man.
Some slaves have evil masters.
They take more than half of their slaves' money and are chosen by only one-tenth, rather than one-fourth, of their slaves.
My master says they are different from him.
I believe him.
He is a good man.
I asked if I could ever become a master, instead of a slave.
My master said, "Yes, anything is possible."
"But first you must pledge allegiance to your present master, and promise not to abandon the system that made you a slave."
I am encouraged by this possibility.
My master is a good man.
He tells me slaves are the real masters, because they can vote for their masters.
I do not understand this, but I believe him.
He is a good man; who lives for no other purpose than to make his slaves happy.
I asked if I could be neither a master nor a slave.
My master said, "No, you must be one or the other."
"There are not other choices."
I believe him.

He knows best.

He is a good man.

I asked my master how our system is different, from those evil masters.

He said: "In our system, masters work for the slaves."

No longer confused, I am beginning to accept his logic.

Now I see it!

Slaves are in control of their masters, because they can choose new masters every few years.

When the masters appear to control the slaves in between elections, it is all a grand delusion!

In reality, they are carrying out the slaves' desires.

For if this were not so, they would not have been chosen in the last election.

How clear it is to me now!

I shall never doubt the system again.

My master is a good man.

7.24 Economics 101

Suppose that every day 10 men go to a restaurant for dinner. The bill for all ten comes to \$100. If it was paid the way we pay our taxes, the first four men would pay nothing; the fifth would pay \$1; the sixth would pay \$3; the seventh \$7; the eighth \$12; the ninth \$18. The tenth man, the richest, would pay \$59.

The 10 men ate dinner in the restaurant every day and seemed quite happy with the arrangement until the owner threw them a curve. "Since you are all such good customers", he said, "I'm going to reduce the cost of your daily meal by \$20." Now, dinner for the 10 only costs \$80.

The first four are unaffected. They still eat for free. Can you figure out how to divvy up the \$20 savings among the remaining six so that everyone gets his fair share? The men realize that \$20 divided by 6 is \$3.33, but if they subtract that from everybody's share, then the fifth man and the sixth man would end up being paid to eat their meal. The restaurant owner suggested that it would be fair to reduce each man's bill by roughly the same amount, and he proceeded to work out the amounts each should pay. Now, the fifth man paid nothing, the sixth pitched in \$2, the seventh paid \$5, the eighth paid \$9, the ninth paid \$12, leaving the tenth man, the richest, with a bill of \$52 instead of \$59.

Outside the restaurant, the men began to compare their savings. "I only got a dollar out of the \$20," complained the sixth man, pointing to the tenth, "and he got \$7!" "Yeah, that's right," exclaimed the fifth man.

"I only saved a dollar, too. It's unfair that he got seven times more than me!"

"That's true," shouted the seventh man.

"Why should he get \$7 back when I got only \$2? The wealthy get all the breaks!"

"Wait a minute," yelled the first four men in unison. "We didn't get anything at all. The system exploits the poor." The nine men surrounded the tenth and beat him up. The next night he didn't show up for dinner, so the nine sat down and ate without him. But when it came time to pay the bill, they discovered something important. They were \$52 short!

And that, boys, girls, college instructors and assorted totalitarian democrats, is how America's tax system works. The people who pay the highest taxes get the most benefit from a tax reduction. Tax

them too much, attack them for being wealthy, and they just may not show up at the table any more. There are lots of good restaurants in Switzerland and the Caribbean.